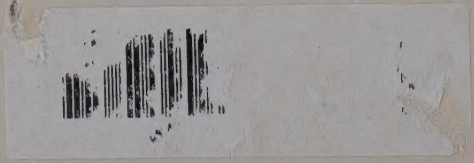
TRINITY COLLEGE LIBRARY

N. n. 225
I

~~H 16~~ NG

495
2



WITHDRAWN FROM
TRINITY COLLEGE LIBRARY

THE MABINOGION

A New Translation

by

T. P. ELLIS, M.A. & JOHN LLOYD, M.A.

VOLUME II

OXFORD
At the Clarendon Press
1929

TRINITY COLLEGE

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
AMEN HOUSE, E.C. 4
LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW
LEIPZIG NEW YORK TORONTO
MELBOURNE CAPETOWN BOMBAY
CALCUTTA MADRAS SHANGHAI
HUMPHREY MILFORD
PUBLISHER TO THE
UNIVERSITY

Printed in Great Britain

CONTENTS OF VOL. II

THE DREAM OF RHONABWY
Introductory Note . . . 1
Translation of Text . . . 4

OWEIN AND LUNET
Introductory Note . . . 26
Translation of Text . . . 29

PEREDUR
Introductory Note . . . 68
Translation of Principal Texts . . 72
Translation of Fragment B . . 138
Translation of Fragment C . . 148

GEREINT AND ENID
Introductory Note . . . 187
Translation of Text . . . 189

INTRODUCTORY NOTE TO THE DREAM OF RHONABWY

THE Dream of Rhonabwy is found only in the Red Book text (pp. 144–61). Dr. Gwenogvryn Evans has, however, proved clearly that a version, now lost, was contained in the White Book.

The Dream of Rhonabwy is the second of the stories of Arthur contained in the Mabinogion. The reference at the beginning to Madog ap Maredudd, a definite historic character, places the redaction as subsequent to the end of the twelfth century. The language employed in the story appears to be of the thirteenth or even the beginning of the fourteenth century.

Norman-French influence appears to some extent in the character of the equipment of some of the participators, especially that of the 'macwyaid', who bring messages to Arthur and Owein Rheged. Otherwise that influence is minute. The vigour and directness of the story are characteristic of Welsh romance of the time, and of Welsh romance only. The long-windedness of French romance is quite absent; the writer has a definite story to tell, and he tells it with a consummate art which is his own.

The episodes contained in the story are purely Welsh also, and owe little to foreign influence. The Dream of Rhonabwy is not found elsewhere in Romance; and it is of singular value as it shows the change undergone (and also the essential identity maintained) in the indigenous characterization of Arthur during the period

that had elapsed since Kulhwch and Olwen. The Arthur of Rhonabwy is of a very different type from the Arthur of Gereint and Enid, and of the Arthur of Chrétien de Troyes and of Malory.

As a story, the Dream of Rhonabwy is a masterpiece of literature in the Welsh original. It is worthy of study also because of its vivid colouring; and the epilogue to the story shows that the redactor was well aware of the effect which he had striven to achieve, and had achieved.

Structurally, the story opens with an introduction to show in what circumstances Rhonabwy had his vision of a distant past. The introduction has a strong vein of broad humour in it. The Dream itself consists of three episodes:

(i) the gathering of Arthur's hosts before the Battle of Badon,

(ii) the interlude of the games of chess between Arthur and Owein Rheged,

(iii) the settling of the terms of truce between Arthur and Osla after the Battle of Badon.

It seems that the interlude, which has really nothing to do with what precedes and follows it, is a late interpolation into the original, and that it has been worked into it in a most skilful manner, supplanting in the process some sort of description of the Battle of Badon itself. It may be, indeed, an allegorical representation of that battle.

The peculiar character of the story indicates, we think, the locality, or traditional locality, in which the site of Badon might be sought, that is, somewhere within half a day's march of Rhyd-y-groes on the Severn.

The ravens of Owein Rheged, referred to again in 'Owein and Lunet', are one of the mysteries of early Welsh romance; but any discussion of them would be out of place here. The list of counsellors given at the end appears to show that the redactor had some knowledge of the long list of warriors contained in Kulhwch and Olwen.

The geography of the story is that of Powys, the mid-Welsh borderland, corresponding roughly with the modern counties of Montgomery and eastern Denbigh.

R.B. 144 MADOC, son of Maredudd, held Powys within its bounds, that is from Porfordd as far as Gwauan in the highlands of Arwystli. And at that time he had a brother who was not equal in rank to himself. He was Iorwerth, the son of Maredudd; and he was greatly worried and sad seeing the honour and power his brother had, and himself without any. And he sought his companions and foster-brothers and took counsel with them what he should do on that account. This is what they decided upon; that some of them should go to demand provision for him.

This is what Madoc offered him: the chief command of his troops,[1] equal with himself, and horses, and arms, and honour. And this Iorwerth declined, and Iorwerth took to raiding even into England, slaughtering people, burning houses, and carrying off prisoners.

And Madoc took counsel and the men of Powys along with him. They decided to levy[2] a hundred men in every three *cymydau* of Powys to seek for him; and they did so in the cultivated area[3] of Powys from Aber Ceiriog to Allictwn Fer (and) to Rhyd Wilure on the R.B. 145 Vyrnwy. And they were the three best *cymydau* in

1 ' Penteuluaeth '= the office of penteulu, commander of the ' teulu '. See note 24 to ' Pwyll '.

2 ' gosod '.

3 ' rhychtir '. Aber Ceiriog is taken as the centre of Powys Fadog, whence radiate the flattish culturable area of Chirkland and Bromfield up to Allington (Allictwn Fer) northwards, and to Rhyd Wilure westwards.

Powys. Whoever had no movable property in that cultivated area would have no reputation, himself or his family, in Powys.[4] And they distributed those men in that cultivated area as far as Nillystwn Trefan.

And there was a man on that search, whose name was Rhonabwy. And Rhonabwy came, in a party,[5] with Cynwrig Frychgoch, a man of Mawddwy, and Cadwgan Fras, a man of Moelfre in Cynlleith, to the house of Heilyn Goch, the son of Cadwgan, the son of Iddon. And when they came to the house, they saw an old hall, pitch-black, lofty and upright,[6] and plenty of smoke coming out of it. And when they came inside, they found the floor full of holes and uneven. Wherever there was a bump[7] in it, with difficulty could a man cling to it, because of the slipperiness of the ground through cow-dung and urine. Wherever there was a hole, a man would sink over his ankles in a mixture of water and cow-filth. And holly[8] branches in abundance on the ground, whose upper twigs had been eaten by the cattle. And when they came to the entrance of the house, they saw the dais-ends[9] were dirty and filthy;

4 The exact meaning of this seems somewhat obscure. The word 'da'=goods, movable property, cattle; also 'good'; and the passage may mean either 'whoever had no goods in that area would have no goods in Powys', or, as it is here rendered, 'whoever had no movable property in that area would have no reputation . . . in Powys'.

5 'yn ran'. Ran (rhan)=part, division, group.

6 'tal unyawn'.

7 'vrynn'. Lit.=hill.

8 The word 'celyn'=holly; but probably the broom is meant.

9 'Parth', the dais or raised end of the common dwelling-room. The plural 'partheu' is used in the text.

and an old hag feeding a fire on one side. And whenever she felt chilled, she would throw a lapful of husks on top of the fire, so that it was not easy for any one in the world to endure the smoke therefrom[10] going into his nostrils. And on the other side they saw a yellow heifer-skin on the ground, and the best of fortune[11] was it for the one of them who might get to go on that skin.

And when they had sat down, they asked the hag where the people of the house were; and the hag would say nothing to them but uncivil words.

And thereupon behold the people coming; a red-haired, rather bald, half-withered[12] man, with a bundle[13] of branches on his back, and a short pale woman with a bundle under her arm.[13] They saluted the man coldly; and the woman kindled the fire with
R.B. 146 the branches for them, and went to cook, and brought food for them, barley-bread, and cheese, and watered milk.

And behold, thereupon a storm[14] of wind and rain, so that it was not easy for any one to go abroad; and by reason of the fatigue of their journey, they went to sleep.

And when the couch was examined, there was nothing on it but a bundle of dusty, flea-infested straw, and bits of twigs through it in quantities, the heifers having eaten whatever straw there was above their heads and

[10] Lit. 'that smoke'. [11] 'Blaenbren'. Lit. 'the top of a tree'.
[12] Anwyl, 'curly-headed'.
[13] 'Beich' is a bundle which has to be carried on the back; 'ceseilwrn', a bundle carried under the arm.
[14] 'storm'; 'dygyfor', lit.=a mustering.

below their feet on it. A pale-red rug, threadbare and full of holes, was spread upon it, and over the rug, a sheet with big holes and slits, and a pillow half-empty, and an exceptionally dirty pillow-case on top of the sheet. And they went to sleep. And sleep fell heavily on Rhonabwy's two companions, after being harassed by fleas and fatigue. And Rhonabwy, as he could neither sleep nor rest, thought that he would suffer less if he went to sleep on the yellow heifer-skin on the dais. And there he slept.

And as soon as slumber came to his eyes, a vision came to him that he and his companions were walking across the plain of Argyngroeg, and his track[15] and objective seemed to be towards Rhyd-y-groes on the Severn. And as he was walking he heard a tumult, and the like of that tumult he had never heard before. And he looked backwards, and he saw a curly yellow-haired youth, with his beard newly shaved, on a yellow horse, which from the top of the two legs and the caps of the two knees downwards (was) green.[16] And a coat of yellow-brocaded silk upon the rider, sewn with green thread, and a gold-hilted sword at his thigh, with a scabbard of new Cordovan leather on it, and deer-skin thongs and clasps of gold upon it. And above that was a sheet of yellow brocaded silk, sewn with green satin, and the borders of the sheet green. And the R.B. 147

15 Anwyl, 'intention'.

16 'o pen y dwygoes (*or* dwy ysgwyd) a thal y deulin'. Translated literally; it means actually 'both hindlegs (or shoulders) and both forelegs from the joints downwards'.

green of the garments on the rider and his horse was as green as the leaves of fir-trees; and the yellow thereof was as yellow as the flowers of the broom; and because of the valiant appearance[17] of the rider, they felt afraid, and began to flee.

And the rider chased them; and when the horse snorted forth his breath, he blew the men far off from him, and when he drew in his breath, they were dragged back right up to the horse's chest. And when he overtook them, they sought quarter of him. 'You shall have it gladly; let there be no fear upon you.' 'Ah, sir, since you have granted us quarter, will you tell us who you are?' said Rhonabwy. 'I will not conceal my kin from you. (I am) Iddawg, the son of Mynyo; and not by my name am I generally called, but by my nickname.' 'Will you tell us what is your nickname?' 'I will tell. Iddawg, the Churn[18] of Prydein, am I called.' 'Ah, sir,' said Rhonabwy, 'what is the reason that you are so called?' 'I will tell you the reason. One of the messengers was I at the Battle of Camlan between Arthur and Medrawd, his nephew. And a spirited young man was I then; and through my craving for battle, I caused strife between them. This is the strife that I made. When the Emperor Arthur sent me to represent to Medrawd that he was his foster-father and his uncle, and to demand peace, lest the sons of the kings of the Isle of Britain and the *gwyrda* should be slain; and when Arthur spoke to me

[17] Lit. 'the valiance they saw'.

[18] 'Cordd'=the churn, i.e., that which caused the agitation.

the fairest words he could, I myself spoke to Medrawd the ugliest words I could; and on that account was the name of Iddawg, the Churn of Prydein applied to me. And through that was the Battle of Camlan plotted. Nevertheless, three nights before the end of the Battle of Camlan, I separated from them, and I came as far as the Green Stone in Prydein to do penance; and R.B. 148 there was I doing penance for seven years, and mercy did I obtain.'

Thereupon, behold, they heard a tumult which was far greater than the previous tumult. And when they looked towards the tumult, behold, a yellowish-red-haired youth, without a beard and without a moustache. And he looked noble upon a great charger. And from the top of its two shoulders and its two knee-caps[16] downwards the horse was yellow. And upon the man a garment of red brocaded silk, sewn with yellow satin, and the borders of the mantle yellow. And that which was yellow of his and his horse's apparel was as yellow as the flowers of the broom; and the redness thereof was as red as the reddest blood in the world.

And then, behold, the rider overtook them; and he asked Iddawg if he might have a share of those small men with him. 'The share it is seemly for me to give, I will give; to be a companion unto them as I have been.' The rider did thus, and went away. 'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'who was that rider?' 'Rhyfawn Pebyr,[19] the son of Deorthach Wledig.'

[19] Throughout this story Rhyfawn Pebyr's name is spelt Rwawn. We retain, however, the popular spelling.

And then they travelled across the great plain of Argyngroeg as far as Rhyd-y-groes on the Severn. And for a mile from the ford on both sides of the road, they saw the tents and pavilions, and a mustering of a great host. And they came back to the bank of the ford. There they saw Arthur sitting in a flat island below the ford; and on one side of him Bedwin the Bishop, and on the other Gwarthegyd, the son of Caw. And a tall auburn-haired youth standing in front of them, and a sword in its sheath in his hand, and a coat and surcoat of pure black brocaded silk upon him. And his face as white as ivory, and his eyebrows as black as jet. And none could see anything of his wrist between his gloves and his sleeves. It was whiter than the lily, and
R.B. 149 thicker than the small of a warrior's leg.

And then Iddawg and those who were with him came in front of Arthur, and saluted him. 'God prosper you,' said Arthur. 'Where, Iddawg, did you find those little men?' 'I found them, lord, higher up on the road.' And the Emperor smiled bitterly.[20] 'Lord,' said Iddawg, 'why do you laugh?' 'Iddawg,' said Arthur, 'I do not laugh; but I feel miserable that men so vile as these are the guardians of this island, after the fine type of men who guarded it of old.'

And then Iddawg said, 'Rhonabwy, do you see the ring with a stone in it on the Emperor's hand?' 'I see,' said he. 'One of the virtues of the stone is that it will cause you to remember what you have seen here to-night; and had you not seen the stone, never at all

[20] 'glas owenu'. Anwyl, 'smiled a feeble smile'.

would remembrance of anything thereof come to you.'

And after that he saw a host coming towards the ford.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'whose is yonder host?' 'The companions of Rhyfawn Pebyr, the son of Deorthach Wledig. And yonder men obtain mead and bragod[21] as a mark of honour; and they get as their mistresses[22] the daughters of the kings of the Isle of Britain without forbiddance. And that do they deserve, for in all need they go in the van and in the rear.' And no other colour saw he either on a horse or a man of that host, save it was as red as blood. And if one of the riders should separate from that host, like to a pillar of fire would he be, mounting up to the sky. And that host pitched its pavilions above the ford.

And thereupon they saw another troop coming towards the ford, and from the saddle-bows upwards the horses were whiter than the lily, and thence downwards as black as jet. Then they saw a rider advancing in front, and spurring his horse into the ford, until water splashed over Arthur and the Bishop, and those who R.B. 150
were in counsel with him, until they were as wet as if they had been dragged out of the river. And as he was turning his horse's head, the youth who was standing in front of Arthur struck the horse on the nostrils with

[21] bragod, bragget, malt-ale.

[22] 'gorderchu'. In Mod. W. means 'to commit adultery with'. In this passage it has undoubtedly a comparable meaning; but it also had in Old W. a less immoral meaning, viz. 'to woo'.

the sword in its scabbard, so that it would have been a marvel, had he struck it with steel, if it had not been shattered, not to mention flesh or bone. And the rider drew his sword half out of its sheath, and asked him, 'Why did you strike my horse; was it in dishonour to me or in counsel?'[23] 'You needed counsel. What folly made you ride so recklessly as to splash water from the ford over Arthur and the consecrated Bishop and their counsellors, until they were as wet as if they had been dragged out of the river?' 'I will take it as counsel'; and he turned his horse's head towards his host.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'who is that[24] rider?' 'The most accomplished and the wisest youth there dwells in this island, Adaon, the son of Taliesin.' 'Who was the man who struck his horse?' 'An impulsive, hot-tempered youth, Elphin, the son of Gwyddno.'

And then a proud handsome man said, in a bold melodious voice, that it was strange that so large a host as this should be contained in so confined a space as that, and that it was more strange to him that there were there at that time those who had promised to be at the Battle of Badon ere midday to fight with Osla of the Long Knife. 'Whether you choose to go there or not go, I will go.' 'Truth do you speak,' said Arthur, 'and we will go together.' 'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'who was the man who spoke so amazingly to Arthur as

[23] In old Welsh custom one of the three blows which could be struck, without causing 'insult', was a blow with the flat of his sword by the leader in battle to his man 'by way of counsel'.

[24] 'gynneu'. Lit. 'just now'.

that[24] man spoke?' 'A man who is entitled to speak as fearlessly as he wishes to him: Caradawg Freichfras, the son of Llyr Marivi,[25] his chief adviser and his cousin.' R.B. 151

And Iddawg took Rhonabwy thence behind him, and that great host set out, each troop in its place, towards Cefn Digoll. And when they came to the middle of the ford on the Severn, Iddawg turned his horse's head round, and Rhonabwy looked upon the valley of the Severn. He saw two splendid troops coming towards the Severn ford. A brilliant white troop came; and on each one of them a mantle of white brocaded silk, with the borders of every one pitch-black. And the two knee-caps and the tops of the two legs of the horses[16] were pitch-black, and the horses were all white, save that. And their standards pure white, and the tips of every one of them pitch-black.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'what is yonder pure white troop?' 'The men of Llychlyn are they; and March, the son of Meirchion, is their prince. He is a nephew of Arthur's.'

And then they saw a troop with pitch-black garments on every one of them, and the borders of every mantle pure white. And from the top of the two legs and the two knee-caps[16] the horses were pure white, and their banners pitch-black, and the tips of every one of them pure white.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'what is yonder troop?' 'The men of Denmark, and Edern, the son of Nudd, is their prince.'

[25] for 'Marini'.

And when they had overtaken the host, Arthur and his host of the Mighty had descended below Caer Badon; and he saw that he himself and Iddawg were journeying along the road which Arthur had journeyed upon. And when he had descended, he heard a great tumult and riot in the host. And the man who might be on the side of the host now would be in the middle anon; and he who might be in the middle would be on the side.

And thereupon, behold he saw a rider coming with mail armour on himself and his horse, the rings whereof
R.B. 152 were whiter than the whitest lily, and the rivets were redder than the reddest blood, and he rode into the middle of the host.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'will yonder host flee?' 'The Emperor Arthur has never fled, and should that saying be heard of you, a lost man would you be. But the man whom you see yonder is Cai. The finest man on horseback in Arthur's court is Cai; and the men who are on the sides of the host are hurrying back to see Cai riding, and the men in the centre are fleeing to the sides lest they be hurt by the horse. And that is the meaning of the excitement of the host.'

Thereupon they heard Cadwr, the Earl of Cornwall, called for. Behold, he arose with Arthur's sword in his hand, and an image in gold of two serpents upon the sword, and when the sword was drawn from its sheath, they saw, as it were, two flames of fire from the mouths of the serpents, and it was not easy for any one to look upon it by reason of the terror thereof. Thereupon,

behold the host stood still, and the excitement ceased, and the Earl returned to his pavilion.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'who was the man who carried Arthur's sword?' 'Cadwr, the Earl of Cornwall, a man whose duty it is to put armour on the King in the day of battle and fighting.'

And thereupon they heard Eirynwych, the son of Peibiaw,[26] called, Arthur's servant, a man with coarse red hair and ugly, and his moustache was red, and stiff bristly hair on him. Behold he came on a huge red horse, whose mane was parted on both sides its neck; and on it a large handsome pack. And the great red youth dismounted in front of Arthur, and out of the pack he drew a chair of gold, and a sheet of ribbed brocaded silk. And he spread the sheet out in front of Arthur, and (it had) a red-gold apple at each corner. And he placed the chair on the sheet, and so large was the chair that three warriors in armour could sit upon it. Gwenn was the name of the sheet, and one of the R.B. 153
peculiarities of the sheet was that the man who might be wrapped in it would be seen by no one, while he himself would see every one. And no colour would ever abide on it, save its own colour.

And Arthur sat upon the sheet, and Owein, the son of Uryen, stood in front of him. 'Owein,' said Arthur, 'will you play chess?'[27] 'I will play, lord,' said Owein.

[26] The text has 'Amheibyn' for 'Amheibyaw'=ap Peibiaw.

[27] 'gwyddbwyll; a game resembling, but not identical with, 'chess'. It was a part of every gentleman's training in ancient Wales to play 'gwyddbwyll'.

And the red-haired servant brought the chess for Arthur and Owein, golden pieces and a silver board. And they commenced to play.

And when they were so most intent upon their game, (bending) over the chess, they saw coming out from a white pavilion with a red top,[28] and the image of a pitch-black serpent on top of the pavilion, with crimson red and poisonous eyes in the serpent's head, and its tongue flaming red, a young curly yellow-haired *macwy*, having blue eyes and a sprouting beard, and a coat and surcoat of yellow brocaded silk upon him, and hose upon his feet of thin light-green woollen cloth, and above the hose two buskins of speckled Cordovan leather, and buckles of gold upon the insteps fastening them, and a sword heavy, gold-hilted, and triple-grooved, with a scabbard of black Cordovan leather, and a tip of refined red gold.

He came to the place where the Emperor and Owein were playing chess, and the *macwy* saluted Owein. And Owein wondered that the *macwy* saluted him and saluted not the Emperor Arthur. And Arthur knew what it was that Owein was thinking, and he said to Owein, 'Do not be surprised at the *macwy* saluting you now. He saluted me a while ago, and his message is for you.' And then the *macwy* said to Owein, 'Lord, is it with your permission that the *gweision bychain*[29] of the Emperor and his *macwyaid* brawl and molest and tire
R.B. 154 your ravens? And if it be not with your permission,

[28] 'penngech', error for 'penngoch'.
[29] See note 24 to 'Pwyll'.

cause the Emperor to forbid them.' 'Lord,' said Owein, 'you hear what the *macwy* says. If it pleases you, forbid them from my ravens.' 'Play your game,' said he. And thereupon the *macwy* returned to his pavilion.

They finished that game, and commenced another. And when they were half through that game, behold a young man with reddish-auburn very curly hair, keen-eyed, and well-built, and with his beard shaved, came out of a bright yellow pavilion. And an image of a bright red lion on the top of the pavilion, and on him a coat of yellow brocaded silk, reaching to the calf of his leg, sewn with red satin thread, and hose on his feet of fine white buckram. And over his hose two buskins of black Cordovan leather on his feet, with golden clasps upon them. And in his hand was a large, heavy, triple-grooved sword, with a sheath of red deer-skin, and the tip of the sheath gold.

He came towards the place where Arthur and Owein were playing chess, and saluted him. And Owein felt it ill that he saluted him; but Arthur felt it no more ill than before. The *macwy* said to Owein, 'Is it not against your will that the *macwyaid* of the Emperor wound your ravens, killing some and tiring others? If it be against your will, beg him to forbid them.' 'Lord,' said Owein, 'forbid your men, if it seems good to you.' 'Play your game,' said the Emperor. And thereupon the *macwy* returned to his pavilion.

That game was finished, and they commenced another. And as they were beginning the first move in the game,

they saw, a little way off from them, a spotted yellow pavilion, the largest any one had seen, and the image of a golden eagle upon it, and a valuable stone in the eagle's head. They saw coming out of the pavilion a
R.B. 155 *macwy*, with thick yellow hair upon his head, fair and graceful, and a mantle of green brocaded silk upon him, and a golden brooch upon the mantle on his right shoulder, as thick as a warrior's middle finger, and hose on his feet of fine Totnes cloth, and two shoes of speckled Cordovan leather on his feet, and golden clasps upon them. The youth (was) of gentle bearing, of handsome face, and red-cheeked, with great eyes like those of a hawk. In the *macwy's* hand was a stout speckled lance, and a newly sharpened head on it, and on the lance a conspicuous pennant.

The *macwy* came, inflamed and enraged, at a quick canter, to the place where Arthur and Owein were playing (bent) over the chess; and they knew that he was angry. And, nevertheless, he saluted Owein, and told him that his principal ravens had been killed, and that those which had not been slain had been wounded and hurt to such an extent that not one of them was capable of lifting its wings one fathom from the ground. 'Lord,' said Owein, 'forbid your men.' 'Play on,' said he, 'if you will.' And then Owein said to the *macwy*, 'Go you hence, and in the place where you see the conflict at its hardest, lift up the standard, and what God wills, let it come to pass.'

And thereupon the *macwy* journeyed straightway to where the battle was hardest upon the ravens, and he

lifted up the standard, and as it was lifted, they rose up into the air, inflamed and enraged, exultingly to let the wind under their wings, and to shake off the weariness from upon them. Having regained their strength and valour, inflamed and exulting, swooping down together,[30] they bore down on the men's heads who had caused them irritation and worry and loss before that. Some they seized by the head, others by the eyes, others by the ears, and others by the arms, and flew up R.B. 156 into the air. And a great commotion was there in the air by reason of the flapping of the triumphant ravens and their cawing; and another great commotion by reason of the men being wounded and disabled, and others being killed.

And Arthur and Owein, over the chessboard, were amazed to hear the commotion. And when they looked up, they perceived[31] a rider coming towards them on a speckled horse. A strange colour was upon the horse, speckled, and its right shoulder brilliant red, and from the top of its legs down to the centre of its hoofs bright yellow. The rider and his horse were equipped with heavy foreign armour. The cloth[32] upon the horse from the saddle-bow in front of him upwards of bright red sendal, and from the saddle-bow downwards of bright yellow sendal. Upon the youth's thigh a large gold-hilted, one-edged sword, and the bright blue scabbard

[30] 'cydneit', lit. 'a leaping together'.

[31] Lit. 'heard'. 'To hear' and 'to see' are frequently expressed in Welsh idiom by the same word 'clybot'.

[32] 'cwnsallt'; generally the trappings of a knight's horse; applied sometimes to the whole covering of the knight.

thereof was new, and the tip of the scabbard was of Spanish brass. The sword belt was of black Irish leather, with gilt cross bars upon it, and a clasp of ivory on it, and a pitch-black tongue on the clasp. A golden helmet was on the rider's head, and a precious stone of great virtue in it. And on the top of the helmet an image of a yellow-red leopard, and two crimson-red stones in its head, so that it was terrifying for a warrior, however strong his heart might be, to look on the leopard's face, and still more on the warrior's face. A lance with a blue shaft, long and heavy, in his hand; and from the hilt upward crimson-red. The head of the shaft was (covered) with the blood of the ravens and their feathers.

The rider came to the place where Arthur and Owein were over the chess. And they observed that he came to them, wearied and worn out with anger. The *macwy* saluted Arthur, and said that Owein's ravens
R.B. 157 were slaying the *gweision bychain*[29] and the *macwyaid*. And Arthur looked at Owein, and said, 'Forbid your ravens.' 'Lord,' said Owein, 'play your game.' And they played. The horseman returned back to the conflict, and the ravens were not forbidden more than before.

And after they had gone on playing a little while, they heard a great tumult, and a screaming of men, and the ravens cawing, flying up into the air with the men in their power, and tearing them, and letting them fall in bits to the ground.

And out of the tumult they saw a horseman coming on a whitish horse; and the left shoulder of the horse

was pitch-black down to the centre of the hoof. The rider and his horse were equipped with great heavy green armour; and on him a surcoat[28] of ribbed yellow brocaded silk, and the borders of the surcoat green. The cloth on the horse pitch-black, and the borders bright yellow. On the *macwy's* thigh was a long, heavy, triple-grooved sword, with a scabbard of red embossed leather, and the belt of fresh red deer skin, with many bands of gold thereon; and a buckle of walrus ivory with a pitch-black tongue to it. A golden helmet was on the rider's head, and a sapphire, possessing magical powers, in it; and on the top of the helmet an image of a yellow-red lion with a flaming red tongue, a foot in length out from his head; and the eyes in its head crimson-red and venomous. The rider came with a thick ashen spear-shaft in his hand, and a head freshly stained with blood on it, and plated with silver. And the *macwy* saluted the Emperor. 'Lord,' said he, 'your *macwyaid*, and *gweision bychain*, and the sons of the *gwyrda* of the Isle of Britain have been slain, so that it will not be easy to defend this island from this day forward.' 'Owein,' said Arthur, 'forbid your ravens.' 'Play this game, lord,' said Owein.

They finished that game and commenced another. R.B. 158
And when they were at the end of that game, behold, they heard a great tumult, and the wailing of armed men, and the cawing of ravens, flapping their wings in the air, and letting the whole armour fall to the ground, and dropping the men and the horses in bits to the ground.

And then they saw a rider on a proud black and white horse; and the top of the horse's left leg bright red, and its right shoulder down to the middle of the hoof pure white. The rider and his horse armed with speckled-yellow armour, speckled with Spanish brass. And the cloth upon himself and upon his horse was in two halves, white and pitch-black, and the borders of the cloth was of golden purple. And over the surcoat was a triple-grooved shining gold-hilted sword, and the belt of the sword of yellow cloth of gold, and the clasp upon it of the eyelid of a pitch-black walrus, with a golden tongue on the clasp. A glittering helmet of yellow brass upon the rider's head, with a shining stone of crystal in it; and on top of the helmet the image of a griffin, with a stone possessed of magical powers in its head. An ashen spear was in his hand, having a rounded shaft, coloured with azure blue, and the head upon the shaft freshly stained with blood, and plated with refined silver. And the rider came angrily to the place where Arthur was, and said, 'The ravens have finished slaying the bodyguard, and the sons of the *gwyrda* of this island.' And he besought him to cause Owein to forbid his ravens.

Then Arthur besought Owein to forbid the ravens. And thereupon Arthur crushed the golden pieces that were upon the board until they were all in dust. And Owein commanded Gwers, the son of Rheged, to lower the banner. And thereupon it was lowered and everything was at peace.

Then Rhonabwy asked Iddawg who were the three

men who came first to Owein, to tell him that his ravens were being slain. And Iddawg said, 'Men who felt it ill that loss should come to Owein, fellow-chiefs and companions, Selyf, the son of Cynan, Garwyn of Powys, and Gwgawn Gleddyfrudd, and Gwres, the son of Rheged, he who carries the banner in the day of battle and fighting.' R.B. 159

'Who', said Rhonabwy, 'were the last three men who came to Arthur to tell him that the ravens were slaying his men?' 'The best and bravest of men,' said Iddawg, 'who hated that Arthur should suffer loss in anything, Blathaon, the son of Mwrheth, and Rhyfawn Pebyr, son of Deorthach Wledig, and Hyfeidd of the One Garment.'

And thereupon, behold forty-eight horsemen came from Ossa of the Long Knife to ask Arthur for a truce to the end of a fortnight and a month. So Arthur arose and went to take counsel; and he came to the place where a curly auburn-haired tall man was, a little way off from him. And there he brought his counsellors to him, Bedwin the Bishop, and Gwarthegyd, the son of Caw, and March, the son of Meirchion, and Cradawg Freichfras, and Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar, and Edyrn, the son of Nudd, and Rhyfawn Pebyr, the son of Deorthach Wledig, and Rhiogan, the son of the King of Ireland, and Gwennwynwyn, the son of Naf, Howel, the son of Emyr Llydaw, Gwilym, the son of the Ruler of France, and Daned, the son of Oth, and Goreu Custennin, and Mabon, the son of Modron, and Peredur of the Long Spear, and Heneidd of the One

Garment, and Twrch, the son of Perif, Nerth, the son of Cadarn, and Gobrw, the son of Echel Forddwyd Twyll, Gweir, the son of Gwestel, and Gadwy, the son of Gereint, Trystan, the son of Tallwch, Moryen Manawg, Granwen, the son of Llyr, and Llacheu, the son of Arthur, and Llawfrodedd Faryfawg, and Cadwr, the Earl of Cornwall, Morfran, the son of Tegid, and Rhyawdd, the son of Morgant, and Dyfyr,
R.B. 160 the son of Alun Dyfed, Gwryr Gwalstod Ieithoedd, Adaon, the son of Taliesin, and Llara, the son of Casnad Wledig, and Ffleudwr Fflam, and Greidyal Gall Dofyd, Gilbert, the son of Cadgyffro, Menw, the son of Teirgwaedd, Gyrthmwl Wledig, Hawrda, the son of Caradawg Freichfras, Gildas, the son of Caw, Carieith, the son of Seidi, and many of the men of Llychlyn and Denmark, and many of the men of Greece along with them, and a sufficiency of the host came to that counsel.

'Iddawg,' said Rhonabwy, 'who was the auburn-haired man to whom they came a while ago?' 'Rhun, the son of Maelgwn Gwynedd, a man whose status it is that every one comes to consult with him.' 'What is the reason that they bring to counsel a youth so young as Cadyrieith, the son of Seidi, with men of such dignity as those yonder?' 'Because there is not in Britain a man more mighty in counsel than he.'

And thereupon, behold the bards came to sing songs to Arthur, and there was not a man who understood that song, save only Cadyrieith himself, except that it was in praise of Arthur.

And thereupon, behold four and twenty asses came with their packs of gold and silver. And a weary, tired man with each one of them, bringing tribute to Arthur from the Isles of Greece.

Thereupon Cadyrieith, the son of Saidi, asked that a truce might be granted to Osla of the Long Knife till the end of a fortnight and a month, and that the asses that had come with the tribute should be given to the bards,[33] with what was upon them, as a reward, and that their songs should be paid for during the truce. And thus was it decided.

'Rhonabwy,' said Iddawg, 'would it not be evil to forbid a young man who can give such splendid advice as this from coming to his lord's council?'

And then Cai arose, and said, 'Whosoever wishes to follow Arthur, let him be this night in Cornwall along with him; and if he wishes not, let him be against Arthur so long as the truce shall last.'

And through the magnitude of that commotion, R.B. 161
Rhonabwy awoke. And when he awoke he was on the yellow heifer skin, having slept upon it three nights and three days.

And this story is called the Dream of Rhonabwy. And behold the reason why no one knows the Dream, neither bard nor reciter, without a book: because of the quantity of colours that were on the horses, and because of the manifold rare colours on the armour and the equipments, and on the valuable clothes, and the stones of magic properties.

33 Note the respect paid to bards, as in 'Branwen'.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE TO OWEIN AND LUNET

THERE is only one complete text of Owein and Lunet, or, as it is generally called, the Lady of the Fountain. This text is contained in R.B., pp. 162–92. There was originally a complete text in the White Book, of which, however, only fragments have survived. These fragments are contained in W.B., cols. 225–32 (corresponding with R.B., p. 163, line 17, to p. 169, line 21), and W.B., cols. 249–56 (corresponding with R.B., p. 182, line 9, to p. 188, line 23). The remaining pages have been torn out roughly, leaving here and there a few words on the torn edges. In so far as the W.B. text survives, it differs but little from the R.B. one, save in orthography and the like.

Owein and Lunet is the third story of the Arthurian cycle in Welsh. Owein is a semi-historical Welsh figure, and most of the characters mentioned are well known in Welsh legend. There are also numerous references and allusions in the tale to matters only recognizable by a Welsh audience, such, for example, as the play on sounds introducing the dig at the Knights Hospitallers, and the mention of Owein's ravens. So far it is distinctively Welsh; but the setting is, in the main, that which is associated with Norman-French romance. Save the reference to Caerlleon-on-Usk, the geography is indeterminate; and the arms, joustings, and much beside is in no sense Celtic. Though it was, probably enough, in origin Welsh, it is clear that the

romance has passed through a very considerable change and has come back to its old home transformed.

Nevertheless, though there are traces here and there, e.g. in the word 'llestyr', that it was transcribed from a French version, the story in Welsh is not a translation of any known redaction. The swing of the narrative in Welsh differs entirely from all other versions; and, as a piece merely of literary skill in Welsh, it is of a very high order. It preserves much of the Welsh directness of diction; and it may be regarded as the high-water mark of Welsh story-telling after Norman-French influence began to affect the reciters. It is well balanced and artistically worked out, unlike Peredur, and it lacks the dull formalism of Gereint and Enid. It is a good combination of Welsh taste in reciting and Norman-French *milieu*, before the latter began to overshadow, and eventually destroy, the former. There is a very definite change in the character of the Arthur of this story and the two succeeding ones from that character in Kulhwch and Olwen. Arthur ceases practically to be an active participant in exploits; it is his knights who act for him; and we find Arthur being constantly referred to as Amherawdyr (Emperor), as in Geoffrey of Monmouth and the Black Book of Carmarthen.

It would appear that this and the succeeding two romances reached France from Wales after the Charlemagne cycle had become popular. As the popularity of the Charlemagne stories faded, the Arthurian ones took their place, adopting some of the characteristics of

their predecessors. The old Welsh country atmosphere gave way to that of the town and castle; and in this new garment they came back to Wales, where they were further subjected, in the re-telling, to ecclesiastical influences, which resulted, to some extent, in their receiving a didactic and moral tendency.

OWEIN AND LUNET

THE Emperor Arthur was in Caerlleon-on-Usk; R.B. 162
and one day he was sitting in his chamber, and along with him were Owein, the son of Uryen, and Cynon, the son of Clydno, and Cai, the son of Cyner. And Gwenhwyfar and her hand-maidens were sewing by a window. And although it was said that there was a keeper of the gate at Arthur's court, there was not one. Glewlwyd Gafaelfawr, nevertheless, was there, with the status of a keeper of the gate, to receive guests and those coming from afar, and to render them the first honours, and to instruct them in the manners and customs of the court. He showed (the way) to those who were entitled to go into the hall or into the chamber; he directed to their lodging those who were entitled thereto. And in the middle of the floor of the chamber was the Emperor Arthur, seated on a marked-out space of green rushes, and under him was a cloth of yellow-red brocaded silk, and a pillow, with a pillow-case of red brocaded silk, was under his elbow.

Thereupon Arthur said, 'My men, if you would not make fun of me,' said he, 'I would go to sleep, while I wait for my food, and you can converse and obtain a pitcher of mead and some chops from Cai.' And the Emperor went to sleep. And Cynon, the son of Clydno, asked Cai for that which Arthur had promised them. 'I would have the pleasantest conversation that he promised me,' said Cai. 'My man,' said Cynon, 'it

[1] Not in W.B. [2] Not in R.B.

R.B. 163 would be fairer for you to do first that which Arthur promised, and then we will tell you the best story we know.'

Cai went to the kitchen and to the mead-cellar, and came with a pitcher of mead with him and a golden goblet, and a fist full of spits with chops upon them. And they took the chops and began to drink the mead.

'Now,' said Cai, 'you should pay me my story.' 'Cynon,' said Owein, 'pay Cai his story.' 'Of a truth,' said Cynon, 'you are older than I am, and a better teller of tales, and you have seen more marvellous things. Do you pay Cai his story.' 'You begin,' said Owein, 'with the rarest that you know.'

'I will,' said Cynon. 'I was the only son of my mother and father. I was high-spirited, and great was my daring, and I thought there was no one in the world who would beat me in any kind of valour. And, having conquered in all deeds of valour those who were in the same country as myself, I equipped myself, and

W.B. 225 travelled through the uttermost parts of the earth and wildernesses. And at last I alighted upon the fairest valley in the world, and trees of an equal height in it,[3] and there was a river running through the valley, and a road by the side of the river. And I travelled along the road until midday. On the other side, I travelled until the time of nones; and then I came to a great plain, and at the end of the plain I saw[4] a huge spark-

3 A typical touch of Welsh poetry of the time as Norman ideas of regularity began to influence it.

4 R.B. 'there was'.

ling fort, with the sea close up to the fort. And I came towards the fort, and behold, I saw[1] two curly yellow-haired youths, with a frontlet of gold on the head of each of them, and a coat of yellow-brocaded silk on each of them [and two buskins of new Cordovan leather on the feet of both of them],[2] and golden clasps fastening them[5] on the insteps of their feet, and a bow of ivory in the hand of each of them, whose strings were made from the sinews of a stag, and their arrows and their shafts were of walrus-ivory, with wings of peacock's R.B. 164
feathers. And golden heads were upon the shafts. Their knives had golden blades, and their hafts[1] with walrus ivory as knobs to them.[6] And they were flinging their knives at a mark. And a little way from them, I saw a curly yellow-haired man in his prime, and his beard was newly shaven, and on him a coat and mantle of yellow brocaded silk, and a ribbon of cloth of gold was on top of[1] the mantle, and two buskins of speckled Cordovan leather upon his feet, and two golden buttons fastening them. And when I saw him, I approached him and saluted him. And through the greatness of his courtesy, he saluted me before I saluted him. And he came along with me towards the fort. There was no W.B. 226
inhabited place in the fort, save what was in the[7] hall. And there there were four and twenty maidens sewing brocaded silk by a window. And this I tell you, Cai,

5 W.R. 'yn eu kau'; R.B. reads, by error, 'yn eu traet', repeating the preceding phrase.

6 R.B. 'yn nodeu udunt'=as knobs to them. W.B. 'ym pob un or deu not'=in each of their two knobs (or bosses).

7 R.B. 'a'.

that it seemed to me that the plainest of them was fairer than the fairest maid you ever saw in the Isle of Britain. The least beautiful of them was more beautiful than Gwenhwyfar, Arthur's wife, when she was at her very fairest on Christmas Day or Easter Day during Mass. And they arose to meet me, and six of them took my horse, and took off my shoes, and six others of them took my armour and washed it in a bowl, until it was as white as the whitest thing. And a third six of them[1] put linen cloths upon the tables, and got food ready. And the fourth six took off my travelling clothes, and put other clothes on me, none other than a shirt and breeches of fine lawn, and a coat and surcoat, and a mantle of yellow brocaded silk, with a broad orfray
R.B. 165 upon the mantle. And they spread numerous cushions, with covers of red lawn upon them, both under me and around me. And there I[8] sat down. And the six of them who had taken my horse took off its harness carefully, as well as the best squires in the Isle of[1] Britain. And thereupon behold, silver bowls with water to wash
W.B. 227 in, and linen towels, green and some white. And I[8] washed myself.[9] And the man above mentioned[1] sat down at the table, and myself next to him, and all[1] the women below me, save those who were serving. And the table was silver, and the table cloths were of fine linen. And there was not a single vessel used in the service of the table but (was) of gold or of silver or of horn. And food came to us, and certain is it, Cai, I had

[8] R.B. 'we'.
[9] R.B. 'ourselves'.

never seen[10] food nor drink, the like of which I saw not there. Moreover, the preparation of food and drink which I saw there was better than in any other place whatsoever. And we went on eating till half the meal was over; and until then neither the man nor one of the maidens spoke one word to me. And when the man thought that I would be better pleased to converse than to eat, he asked me [what journey I was upon, and][2] what sort of man I was. And I said that I was pleased[11] to find some one to talk with me, and that there was no fault[12] in the court so great[12] as the poor conversation of the people. "Ah, sir," said the man, "we would have talked with you long ago,[2] but that it would have interfered with your food. And now we will talk with you."

'And then I told the man who I was, and what my journey was for; and I told him that I was seeking whether any one would overcome me or I would overcome everybody.[13] And then the man looked at me, and smiled, and said to me, "Were it not that I think W.B. 228 too much distress would come upon you from telling you,[2] I would shew you that which you are seeking for."

'And thereat[1] I became sad and anxious, and the R.B. 166 man perceived this on me, and said to me, "Since you do prefer", said he, "that I should inform you of your hurt rather than your good, I will show you. Sleep

[10] W.B. adds 'nor heard of'.

[11] W.B. 'it was high time for me'.

[12] 'bei kymeint'. Anwyl, 'not so many men in the court of poor conversation'. We agree, however, with Loth that 'bei' here=fault. The phrase occurs also in the same sense in Peredur.

[13] W.B. 'him'.

here to-night," said he, "and arise early in the morning, and take the road you are upon[14] up to the top of the valley, until you come to the wood you came through. And a little way in the wood you will meet with a by-road on your right-hand side. Travel along that until you come to a great clearing of fields, and to a tumulus in the centre of the clearing. A large black man will you see on top[15] of the tumulus, who is in no way[1] smaller than two men of the men of this world. And one foot has he, and one eye in the middle of his forehead. And he has a staff of iron, and certain for you is it that there are no two men in the world[1] who would not find in that staff a burden for them. And he is not an unamiable man; he is an ugly man, and the woodward[16] is he of that wood. And you will see a thousand wild animals grazing round about him. Ask him the road to go[1] out of the clearing, and he will be gruff to you, but, nevertheless,[2] he will show you the road, so that you may find what you are seeking."

'And that night seemed long to me; and next day in the morning I arose and clothed myself, and mounted my horse, and travelled straight on through the valley
W.B. 229 and[17] the wood, and I came to the byroad the man had mentioned up to the clearing. And when I came there I marvelled more to see there three times as many wild animals as the man had said. And the

[14] W.B. 'came by'. [15] W.B. 'in the middle'.

[16] R.B. 'wtwart'; W.B. 'coydwr'; an official introduced into Wales by the Normans.

[17] R.B. 'to'.

black man was seated there[2] on top of the tumulus. The man had told me he was huge. Much larger was he than that. And the iron staff that the man had said to me[1] was a burden for two men, it was clear to me, Cai, was a burden for four warriors. And it was in the black man's hand. [And I saluted the black man[2]], and he said naught to me, save gruffness. And I asked him R.B. 167
what power he had over those[18] animals. "I will show you, little man," said he.

'So he took his staff in his hand, and with it he struck a stag a great blow, until it brayed loudly; and at its braying wild[2] animals came, until they were as great a multitude as the stars in the sky, and until I was hemmed in, standing in the clearing with them. They were serpents, and lions,[2] and vipers, and all sorts of animals. And he looked on them all, and commanded them to go and graze, and they bowed down their heads, and showed reverence to him, like men bound in homage do[2] to their lord. And thereupon the black man[1] said to me, "Do you see, little man, the power I have over these animals?" And then I asked him the road, and he was rough to me.[2] Nevertheless, he asked W.B. 230
me what place I wished to go to. And I told him who I was, and what thing I was seeking, and he told me, "Take", said he, "the road to the end of the clearing, and climb up the hill beyond, until you reach the top, and from there you will see a dale like a great valley, and in the middle of the dale, you will see a huge tree, and greener are its branches than the greenest fir-trees.

[18] W.B. 'the'.

And under that tree there is a fountain, and at the side of the fountain there is a marble[19] slab, and upon the slab there is a silver bowl, fastened to a silver chain, so that it cannot be parted from it. Take the bowl, and throw a bowlful of water on top of the slab. And then you will hear heavy thunder, and you will think that the sky and the earth tremble by reason of the thunder. And after the thunder a cold rainstorm, and it will be hard for you to suffer it and live. And hailstones will there[20] be, and after the rainstorm there will be fine weather. And there will be not one leaf upon the tree
R.B. 168 but will have been carried away by the storm. And thereupon a flight of birds will come and alight on the tree. And never have you heard in your own land a song equal to that which they will sing. And when you will be most delighted with the song of the birds,[1] you will hear a groan, and a great[2] complaining throughout the valley coming towards you. And thereupon you will
W.B. 231 see a knight on a pitch-black horse, with a garment of deep black brocaded silk upon him, and a pennon of deep black lawn upon his lance, and he will charge you as quickly as he can. If you flee from him he will overtake you, and if you await him, and you on horseback, he will leave you on foot. And if you find not trouble there, you need never ask for trouble as long as you live."

'And I took the road until I came to the top of the hill, and from there I saw what the black man had declared to me. And near to the tree did I come, and

[19] W.B 'large'. [20] R.B 'the shower'.

a fountain saw I under the tree, and a marble slab close to it, and a silver bowl tied to the chain. And I took the bowl, and threw a bowlful of water on top of the slab. And thereupon, behold the thunder came, far louder than the black man had told me. And after the thunder, the shower. And I was certain, Cai, neither man nor beast would escape alive whom the shower should overtake outside.[1] For neither skin nor flesh would stop one of those hailstones until the bone stopped it. I turned my horse's haunches towards the shower, and placed the point of my shield on my horses' head and neck, and the veil of the shield[21] on my own head. And thus endured the shower. [And as my life was about to leave my body, the storm ceased.][2] And when I looked upon the tree there was not a leaf on it. And then it W.B. 232
cleared. And thereupon behold the birds alighted on the tree, and began[2] singing. And I am positive, Cai, that, neither before nor after, have I ever heard so sweet a song as that. And when I was most delighted R.B. 169
listening to the singing of the[2] birds, behold a groan coming along the valley, and coming[2] towards me. And it said to me, "Ah, knight," said it, "what would you have of me? What evil have I done to you, that you should do to me and my dominions what you have done to-day? Know you not that the storm to-day has left alive neither man nor beast in my dominions whom it caught outside?"

'And, thereupon, behold a knight on a pitch-black

21 'baryflen'. Anwyl, 'visor'; Bodfan Anwyl, 'a kind of veil hanging from a shield'.

horse, with a garment of deep-black brocaded silk upon him, and a pennon of deep-black lawn on his lance.[22] And I attacked him,[23] and though that was a brave fight, it was not long ere he had thrown me to the ground. And thereupon, the knight put the butt end of his lance through my horse's bridle-rein, and went away, and both horses with him, and left me there.

'And the black man did not even pay me so much honour as to make a prisoner of me, nor did he despoil me. And I came back by the road I had formerly come. And when I came to the clearing, the black man was there, and I confess to you, Cai, it surprises me that I did not melt into a molten pool through shame of the mockery I suffered from the black man. And to the fort where I[24] had been the night before I came that
End of W.B. 232 night. And more joyous were they to me that night than the night before, and better was I feasted, and the conversation I wished for did I get from the men and the women. And I met with none who made any allusion to my assault at the fountain, nor did I allude to it to anybody. And there I remained that night.

'And when I arose in the morning next day, there was a dark chestnut palfrey, whose mane was brilliant red, as red as the liver-wort, ready and fully harnessed. And after I had put on my armour, and had left my
R.B. 170 blessings there, I came to my own court. And that horse have I still in the stable yonder. And between me

[22] R.B. 'him'.

[23] W.B. 'ac ymgyrchu a orugum'; R.B. 'ac ymgyrchu a orugam'=we attacked each other.

[24] W.B. 'we'.

and God, Cai, I would not give it again for the best palfrey in the Isle of Britain, and God knows, Cai, no man ever confessed to a story more dishonouring to himself than this. Nevertheless, still more surprised am I that, neither before nor since, have I ever heard of any one who knows of this story but that I have told you,[2] and that the subject of this story is in the dominions of the Emperor Arthur, without any one lighting upon it.'

'Ah, man,' said Owein, 'would it not be well to go and try to light on that place?'

'By the hand of my friend,' said Cai, 'ofttimes does your tongue speak of that which your deeds do not perform.'

'God knows,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'it would be better for you to be hanged, Cai, than that you should say such wrongful words as those to a man like Owein.'

'By my friend's hand,' said Cai, 'what you have said, lady, is not more in Owein's praise than what I said.'

And thereupon Arthur awoke, and asked if he had slept any time. 'Yes, lord,' said Owein, 'some time.' 'Is it time for us to go to the tables?' 'It is time, lord,' said Owein.

And then the horn was sounded for washing; and the Emperor and the whole of his bodyguard went to eat. And when they had finished eating, Owein disappeared away, and came to his lodging, and made ready his horse and his armour.

And when he saw the day next morning, he put his armour on, and mounted his horse, and journeyed straightway to the uttermost parts of the world and

desert mountains. And at last, he alighted on the dell which Cynon had described to him, so that he knew for certain that it was the same one. And he travelled
R.B. 171 along the dell by the side of the river, and he travelled on the other side of the river until he came to the valley. And through the valley he travelled until he saw the fort, and he came up to the fort. And he saw the youths throwing their knives at a mark in the place Cynon had seen them, and the yellow-haired man who owned the fort standing near them.

And when Owein was about to salute the yellow-haired man, the man saluted Owein, and he went in front towards the fort. And he saw a chamber in the fort; and when he entered the chamber, he saw maidens sewing brocaded silk in golden chairs. And more marvellous by far was their fairness and beauty to Owein than what Cynon had said to him. And they arose to wait on Owein as they had waited on Cynon. And more wonderstruck was Owein at the feast than was Cynon. And half-way through the meal the yellow-haired man asked Owein what journey he was upon. And Owein told him all about his journey, 'I wish to seek the knight who guards the fountain.' And the yellow-haired man smiled; and it was as difficult for him to tell Owein about that journey as it had been difficult for him to tell Cynon. Nevertheless, he told Owein all about it. And they went to sleep.

And next day in the morning, Owein's horse was made ready by the maidens. And Owein journeyed straight on until he came to the clearing wherein was

the black man. And Owein was more wonderstruck at the size of the black man than Cynon had been; and Owein asked the black man the road, and he showed it to him. And Owein walked along the road as Cynon had done until he came near to the green tree. And he saw the fountain, and a slab near the fountain, and a bowl upon it. And Owein took the bowl, and flung a bowlful of water on the slab. And thereupon, behold R.B. 172
the thunder, and after the thunder, the shower. They were far heavier than Cynon had said. And after the shower, the skies lightened. And when Owein looked at the tree, there was not one leaf upon it. And thereupon, behold the birds alighted on the tree and sang. And when Owein was most delighted with the song of the birds, he saw a knight coming along the valley, and Owein met him and jousted with him boldly. And they broke both their lances, and they unsheathed two swords and arose. And thereupon Owein struck the knight a blow through his helmet, mail-cap, bonnet, and ventail, and through the skin and flesh and bone, until it wounded the brain. And thereupon the black knight knew that he had received a fatal blow, and he turned his horse's head, and fled. And Owein pursued him, and though Owein did not reach to strike him with his sword, he was not far from him. And thereupon, Owein saw a great shining fort. And they came to the gate of the fort; and they let the black knight in, and let the portcullis fall upon Owein, and it struck him in the hind bow of the saddle, until it cut the horse in two right through the rowels of the spurs from Owein's

heels, and then the portcullis fell right down to the ground. And the rowels of the spurs, and a part of the horse were outside; and Owein on the other part of the horse, was between the two gates. And the inner gate was closed, so that Owein was unable to go thence. And Owein was in a difficult position.

And while Owein was so, he saw, through the joints of the gate, a road facing him, and a street[25] of houses
R.B. 173 on both sides of the road. And he saw a curly yellow-haired maiden, with a frontlet of gold on her head, and a garment of yellow brocaded silk upon her, and two buskins of speckled Cordovan leather on her feet. And she came to the gate, and asked for it to be opened.

'God knows, lady,' said Owein, 'the gate cannot be opened for you from this side any more than you can deliver me from that side.'

'God knows,' said the maiden, 'great pity it is you cannot be released; it would be well for a woman to do you a good turn. God knows I never saw a youth more suitable than yourself for a woman. Were she a friend to you, the best friend of a woman would you be; were she your lover, the best lover would you be. And for that reason,' said she, 'what I can do to deliver you, I will do. Take you this ring, and put it on your finger, and put the stone inside your hand, and close your fist upon the stone, and so long as you keep it hidden, it will hide you; and when they recollect this place, they will come to fetch you to put you to death on account of the man, and they will take it ill when they cannot

[25] 'ystret'; probably vice 'ystre'=in a row.

see you. And I shall be on yonder mounting-block awaiting you, and you will see me, though I shall not see you. Come you and put your hand on top of my shoulder, and then I shall know that you have come to me. And along the road that I shall go thence, do you come with me.' And thereupon she went away thence from Owein. And Owein did all that the maiden had told him to.

And thereupon the men came from the court to seek Owein to put him to death. And when they came to seek him, they found nought save half the horse. And they felt it ill. And Owein disappeared from their midst, and came to the maiden, and put his hand upon her shoulder, and straightway she started off, and Owein with her, until they came to the door of a large handsome upper-chamber. And the maiden opened the upper-chamber, and they came inside, and closed the R.B. 174 upper-chamber.

And Owein looked all over the upper-chamber, and there was not in the upper chamber a nail which was not coloured with priceless colour, nor was there a panel without gilded carvings of divers designs upon it.

And the maiden kindled the fire wood,[26] and took a silver bowl with water in it, and a towel of white lawn on her shoulder, and gave water for Owein to wash, and placed a silver table, inset with gold, in front of him, and upon it a cloth of yellow lawn, and she brought him his dinner. And Owein felt certain

[26] 'glo', Mod. W.=coal. Perhaps here=charcoal; in place-names 'glo' seems to equal 'burnt wood', i.e. charcoal.

that he had never seen any kind of food, which he did not see plenty thereof there. Besides that, the food he saw there was better prepared than in any other place whatsoever. And he had never seen anywhere such an abundance of rare courses of food and drink as there. And there was not one vessel used to serve him, which was not a silver or a gold vessel.

And Owein ate and drank until it was late in the time of nones.[27] And thereupon, behold they heard cries of distress in the fort, and Owein asked the maiden what the cry was. 'They are administering unction to the *gwrda* who owns the fort,' said the maiden. And Owein went to sleep. And worthy of Arthur was the excellence of the bed that the maiden made for him. It was of scarlet with furs[28] and brocaded silk, and sendal and lawn.

And at midnight they heard a piteous cry of distress. 'What', said Owein, 'is the cry of distress for now?' 'The *gwrda* who owns the fort is now dead,' said the maiden. And a little way on in the day, they heard cries of distress and wailing, immense in magnitude. And Owein asked the maiden what was the meaning of this wailing. 'They are going with the body of the *gwrda*, who owns the fort, to the churchyard.'

And Owein arose and dressed himself, and opened
R.B. 175 the window of the upper-chamber, and looked towards the fort, and he saw neither the limits nor the end of the hosts which filled the roads, and they were fully

[27] 'pryt nawn hir'. Anwyl, 'early in the afternoon'.
[28] Anwyl, 'cloth'.

armed and many women along with them on horseback and on foot, and the clerics of the whole city chanting. And it seemed to Owein that the sky resounded with the greatness of the wailing and the trumpets, and the clerics chanting. And in the midst of that host was the bier, with a covering of white lawn upon it, and waxen tapers were burning all around it, and there was not a man bearing the bier who was less than a baron of great dominions.

And Owein was certain that he had never seen a throng so beautiful as that with brocaded silk and silk and sendal. And behind that host he saw a yellow-haired lady with her hair over her two shoulders, and blood from bruises staining her hair, and a garment of yellow brocaded silk upon her, torn in tatters. And two buskins of speckled Cordovan leather upon her feet. And strange it was that the ends of her fingers were not in sores from the violence with which she beat her hands together. And Owein was positive he had never seen a lady so fair as she, had she been in her proper state. And higher was her cry of distress than that of any person or of the horns in the host.

And when he saw the lady, he burnt with love for her, until every part of him was filled. And Owein asked the maiden who the lady was. 'God knows,' said the maiden, 'it can be said that she is the fairest of women, and the most chaste, and the most generous, and the wisest, and the best born. My Lady is she, and the Lady of the Fountain is the lady called, whose husband you killed yesterday.'

'God knows,' said Owein, 'she is the lady I love best.' 'God knows,' said the maiden, 'she will not love you in the least or at all.'

And thereupon, the maiden arose and lit the fire
R.B. 176 wood[26] and filled a crock with water, and put it to boil. And she took a white linen towel, and placed it on Owein's neck. And she took an ivory goblet and a silver bowl, and filled them with hot water, and washed Owein's head. And thereupon she opened a casket and took out a razor with an ivory handle, and two grooves of gold were in the razor. And she shaved his beard, and dried his head and his neck with the towel. And then the maiden stood in front of Owein, and gave him his dinner; and Owein felt certain that never had he had a dinner to equal it, nor more careful service.

And after he had finished his dinner, the maiden prepared his bed for him. 'Come here', said she, 'to sleep, and I, I will go to make love for you.' And Owein went to sleep, and the maiden closed the door of the upper-chamber, and went forth to the fort.

And when she came there, there was naught but sadness and grief. And the Lady herself in the chamber, unable to endure the sight of any one through sadness. And Lunet came to her and greeted her, and the Lady answered not. And the maiden was angry, and said to her, 'What has befallen you that you answer no one to day?'

'Lunet,' said the Lady, 'where is your respect, that you did not come to see the grief that was upon me. It was due of you. I made you rich; and it was wrong of

you not to come to see the grief that was upon me. And that was wrong of you.'

'Of a truth,' said Lunet, 'I did not think that your common sense was not better than it is. It were better for you to try to repair the loss of that *gwrda* than anything else. You cannot get him back.'

'Between me and God,' said the Lady, 'I cannot replace my lord by any other man in the world.' 'You can', said Lunet, 'marry a man who would be as good as, if not better than he.' 'Between me and God,' R.B. 177 said the Lady, 'were it not against my desire to have a person I have brought up put to death, I would have you put to death, for suggesting to me so wrong a thing as that. But I will cause you to be banished.'

'I am glad', said Lunet, 'that you have no cause therefor, save that I have shown you your advantage, where you could not hit upon it yourself. A curse be upon that one of us who shall first communicate with the other, whether it be I who seek an invitation from you, or you invite me.'

And thereupon Lunet went away; and the Lady rose and went as far as the chamber door after Lunet, and coughed loudly. And Lunet looked backwards, and the Lady beckoned to Lunet, and Lunet came back to the Lady. 'Between me and God,' said the Lady to Lunet, 'evil is your nature; but since you wanted to point out what was to my advantage,[29] show me in what way it may be.'

'I will tell you,' said she. 'You know that your

[29] Or 'since what you said was to my advantage'.

dominions cannot be maintained, save by prowess and arms. For that reason, seek quickly one who can uphold them.' 'How can I do that?' said the Lady. 'I will show you,' said Lunet, 'unless you can maintain the fountain, you cannot maintain your dominions. None can maintain the fountain save one of Arthur's bodyguard. And I will go', said Lunet, 'as far as Arthur's court. And a curse be on me,' said she, 'if I return from there without a warrior who will guard the fountain as well as, if not better than, the man who guarded it before.' 'That is difficult,' said the lady. 'Nevertheless go and prove what you say.'

Lunet departed on the pretext of going to Arthur's court, and she came to the upper chamber to Owein. And there she remained with Owein, until there was time for her to have returned from Arthur's court. And
R.B. 178 then she dressed herself, and came to visit the Lady. And the Lady was glad to see her. 'Have you news from Arthur's court?' said the Lady. 'The best of news, Lady, have I,' said she. 'I have achieved my quest; and when do you wish me to show you the champion who has come with me?' 'Come with him', said the Lady, 'to morrow at midday, and I will cause the town to be at leisure by then.'

And she went home. And at midday, next day, Owein dressed himself in a coat, and surcoat, and a mantle of yellow brocaded silk, with a broad orfray on the mantle of cloth of gold, and two buskins of speckled Cordovan leather upon his feet, with the likeness of a golden lion upon their clasps. And they

came to the Lady's chamber; and the Lady was rejoiced to see them. And the Lady looked steadfastly at Owein. 'Lunet,' said she, 'there is not the appearance of a traveller upon this champion.' 'What harm is there in that, Lady?' said Lunet. 'Between me and God,' said the Lady, 'no one dragged my lord's soul out of his body but this man.' 'So much the better for you, Lady; had he not been mightier than he, he would never have taken his life. Naught can be done in that,' said she, 'for it is finished with.' 'Go back home,' said the Lady, 'and I, I will take counsel.'

And the Lady caused the whole of her dominions to be summoned to one place next day; and she told them that her earldom was without support, and it could not be defended save by chivalry and arms and valour. 'And, therefore, I place myself on your choice, either let one of you take me, or permit me to take a husband elsewhere to defend it.' And they decided to let her marry elsewhere. And then she brought the bishops and archbishops to her court to marry[30] her to Owein. And the men of the earldom did homage to Owein. R.B. 179

And Owein guarded the fountain with lance and sword. Thus did he guard it. Whatever knight came there, Owein overthrew him, and held him to ransom for his full value; and the proceeds thereof Owein divided among the barons and knights, until there was no greater love for a man in the whole world by his

[30] 'priodas'. This is the only reference in the Mabinogion to a religious ceremony at marriage.

dominions than he possessed. And thus was he occupied for three years.

And one day Gwalchmai was strolling about with the Emperor Arthur, and he looked at Arthur, and saw that he was exceedingly sad. And Gwalchmai grieved greatly at seeing Arthur in that condition, and he asked him, 'Lord, what has happened to you?' 'Between me and God, Gwalchmai,' said Arthur, 'I am longing for Owein, who has been lost to me for the space of three years; and should I be a fourth year without seeing him, my soul will not remain in my body. And I know for certain that it was because of the story of Cynon, the son of Clydno, that I lost Owein from amongst us.' 'There is no need for you, lord,'[2] said Gwalchmai,[1] 'to call your dominions to arms for that, for you and the men of your court[31] can avenge Owein, if he has been slain, or free him, if he be in prison, and if he be alive, bring him with you.'

And according to the words of Gwalchmai was it settled. And Arthur and the men of his house with him fitted themselves out to seek for Owein. And the size of the host was three thousand, in addition to camp-followers. And Cynon, the son of Clydno, guided them, and Arthur came to the fort wherein Cynon had been; and when they came there, the youths were shooting in the same place, and the yellow-haired man was standing near at hand. And when the yellow-haired man saw Arthur, he saluted him, and invited him in. And Arthur accepted the invitation, and they

[31] R.B. 'house

came to the fort. Large though their number was, it was not noticed in the fort.[32] And the maidens arose to wait upon them. And poor was all the service they had ever seen compared to the service of the women; nor was the service upon the grooms that night worse than what Arthur himself would have had in his own court. R.B. 180

And next day in the morning Arthur set forth, and Cynon was his guide thence. And they came to the place where the black man was, and more surprising to Arthur was the size of the black man than what he had been told.

And they came to the top of the hill, and to the valley right up to the green tree, and until they saw the fountain and the bowl and the slab. And thereupon, Cai came to Arthur and said, 'Lord,' said he, 'I know the cause of all this journey, and I beseech you to let me throw water on the slab, and encounter the first affliction that shall come.' And Arthur permitted him.

And Cai threw a bowlful of water upon the slab, and immediately thereafter the thunder came, and after the thunder, the shower; and never had they heard thunder and storm like unto them, and several of the camp-followers who were in Arthur's company were slain by the storm. And after the storm had ceased, the sky lightened; and when they looked upon the tree, there was not a leaf upon it. And the birds alighted upon the tree, and they were certain that they had never heard a song equal to that the birds were singing. And thereupon, they beheld a knight upon a pitch-black horse,

[32] Or 'their purpose in the court was not known'.

with a garment of deep-black brocaded silk on him, and he travelled vigorously. And Cai met him, and jousted with him, and the joust was not long ere Cai was overthrown. And thereupon the knight pitched his pavilion, and Arthur and his companions pitched their pavilions that night.

And when they arose next day in the morning, the
R.B. 181 signal for combat was upon the knight's lance. And Cai came to Arthur, and said to him, 'Lord,' said he, 'bad luck was my overthrow yesterday; and does it please you for me to go to-day to joust with the knight?' 'I will let you,' said Arthur; and Cai went to the knight. And immediately he overthrew Cai, and looked upon him, and struck him with the butt-end of his shaft upon the head, until the helmet and the mail-cap were broken, and the skin and the flesh down to the bone, to a depth equal to the shaft-head. And Cai returned back to his companions.

And from that time onwards, Arthur's bodyguard went, one after the other, to joust with the knight until there was not one without being overthrown by the knight save Arthur and Gwalchmai. And Arthur arrayed himself to go to joust with the knight. 'Alas, lord,' said Gwalchmai, 'let me go to joust with the knight first.' And Arthur let him. And he went to joust with the knight, and upon him and his horse was a covering of brocaded silk, which the daughter of the Earl of Anjou[33] had sent him, and by reason thereof none of the host recognized him. And they charged and

33 In text 'Rangyw'.

jousted that day until eventide; and neither of them came near to throwing the other to the ground.

And next day they went to joust with keen lances, and neither of them conquered the other. And the third day they went to joust, each of them having a strong, heavy, keen lance. And they burnt with rage, and they charged for full half a day, and each of them gave such a thrust to the other, that their horses' girths were broken, and until both of them fell to the ground over their horses' cruppers. And they got up quickly, and drew their swords, and smote. And the hosts that saw them thus were certain that never had they seen two men so splendid as they, nor so strong. And had it R.B. 182 been the darkness of night, there would have been light from the fire from their arms. And thereupon the knight gave Gwalchmai a blow which bore the helmet from his face; and thereupon[34] the knight knew that it was Gwalchmai. And then Owein said, 'Lord Gwalchmai, I did not recognize you, because of your surcoat, though you are my cousin. Take my sword and my armour.' 'You, Owein, are lord,' said Gwalchmai, 'and you have conquered. Take my sword.'

And thereupon Arthur perceived them, and he W.B. 249 came to them. 'Lord Arthur,'[1] said Gwalchmai, 'behold, Owein, who has conquered me, and will not have my arms of me.' 'Lord,' said Owein, 'he has conquered me, and he will not have my sword.' 'Give me', said Arthur, 'your swords; and so neither of you will have triumphed over the other.' And Owein

34 R.B. 'so that'.

put his hands round the Emperor[2] Arthur's neck, and they embraced each other. And the host came to them there, pressing in haste to try to see Owein and to embrace him, and in that press there were very nearly dead bodies.

And that night they all[2] went to their pavilions, and the next morning the Emperor[2] Arthur designed to depart. 'Lord,' said Owein, 'that is not right of you. Three years ago from now came[35] I away from you, lord, and this place is mine. And throughout that time up to to-day, I have been preparing a feast for you; since I knew you would come to seek me. Come with me, to cast aside your weariness and your men's. And baths shall you have.'

And all of them came together[2] to the fort of the Lady of the Fountain; and in three months was the feast consumed which had been three years under preparation. And never had they had a more soothing or
R.B. 183 better feast than that. And then Arthur designed to go away, and Arthur dispatched messengers to the Lady to ask her to allow Owein to go with him, so as to show him to the *gwyrda* of the Isle of Britain and its good ladies for the space of three months. And the Lady gave permission, and it was difficult for her.

W.B. 250 And Owein came with Arthur to the Isle of Britain. And when he had come amongst his kindred and his boon-companions, he remained there three years instead of three months.

And one day as Owein was eating at the table in the

35 R.B. 'went'.

court of the Emperor Arthur,[2] in Caerlleon on Usk, behold a maiden came on a curly-maned bay horse. And its mane reached to the ground.[2] And upon her was a garment of yellow-brocaded silk, and the bridle and what could be seen of the saddle was all of gold. And she came in front of Owein, and took off the ring that was upon Owein's[36] hand. 'Thus', said she, 'is it done unto the false deceiver and traitor. A curse be on your beard.' And she turned her horse's head and away. And then remembrance came to Owein of that[36] travel, and he became sad. And when he had finished eating, he came[1] to his lodging, and he sorrowed greatly[2] that night.

And next day in the morning[2] he arose. Not to the court of Arthur,[2] did he set out; but to the uttermost ends of the world, and to desert mountains. And so he continued wandering[2] until his clothes were all worn out, and until his body was wellnigh wasted away, and until long hair grew all over him. And he wandered about with wild beasts, and grazed with them, until they were accustomed to him. And then he became weak, so that he could not keep[37] up with them. And he came down from the mountain to the plain, and reached the fairest park in the world. And a widowed Countess owned the park.

And one day the Countess and her handmaidens went for a stroll along [the shore of a lake that was in][38] the park, as far as the middle of it. And they saw there[39] R.B. 184; W.B. 251

[36] W.B. 'his'. [37] R.B. 'without being able to keep'.
[38] W.B. 'the side of'. [39] W.B. 'in the park'.

the form and image of a man, so that they were as if stricken with fear of him. Nevertheless, they came near him, and felt him, and examined him carefully.[2] And they perceived that his veins were full, and that he was wasting by reason of the sun. And the Countess came back to the castle, and took a goblet full of precious ointment, and put it in the hand of one of her handmaidens.[40] 'Go with this,' said she, 'and take yonder horse and clothing with you, and put them near the man we saw awhile ago. And anoint him with this ointment [near his heart, and if there be life in him,][1] he will arise by reason of this ointment. Watch what he does.'

And the maiden came straightaway, and put all the ointment upon him, and left the horse and clothes at his hand, and withdrew,[2] and went some distance off from him, and hid herself and watched him. And after a little while, she saw him scratch his arms; and he lifted himself up and looked at his own[2] skin, and was ashamed, so ugly was the appearance upon him.[41] And he perceived the horse and clothes near him; and he crawled until he was able to drag the clothes to himself[42] out of the saddle. And he dressed himself in them, and mounted the horse with difficulty. And thereupon the maiden showed herself to him, and greeted him. And glad was he to see the maiden. And he asked the maiden[43] what land it was, and what was the place. 'Of

[40] W.B. 'a maiden'.
[41] W.B. 'did he see the appearance that was upon him'.
[42] W.B. 'until he could reach the clothes, and drag them . . .'
[43] R.B. 'her'.

a truth,' said the maiden, 'a widowed Countess owns yonder castle. And when her married lord[44] died he W.B. 252
left her two earldoms. And to-day[45] there is not in her possession save yonder[46] one house, which a young Earl, who is her neighbour, has not deprived her of, because she will not go as a wife to him.' 'Sad is that,' said Owein; and Owein and the maid walked to the castle, and Owein alighted in the castle, and the maiden led him[47] to a comfortable chamber,[48] and lit a fire for R.B. 185
him, and left him there.

And the maiden came to the Countess, and put the goblet in her hand. 'Ah, maiden,' said the Countess, 'where is all the ointment?' 'Indeed, I have spilt it all,[1] lady,'[2] said she. 'Oh maiden,' said the Countess, 'it is not easy for me to forgive you therefor, for[1] it is unfortunate for me to have spent the worth of seven score pounds of precious ointment upon a man without knowing who he is. However, maiden,' said she,[1] 'wait upon him, so that he shall have abundance of everything.'

And this the maiden did, and served him with food and drink and fire, and a bed and baths until he was well, and the hair fell off Owein in scaly tufts. Thus was he in this state for three months, and then his skin was whiter than it had been[1] before.

And then one day Owein heard a tumult in the castle, a great preparation,[2] and the bringing of arms

44 R.B. 'husband'. 45 W.B. 'night'. 46 R.B. 'this'.
47 W.B. 'and she dismounted, and the maid took her'.
48 W.B. has 'castell' for 'ystafell'.

inside. And Owein asked the maiden, 'What is this tumult?' said he.[2] 'The Earl', said she, 'I spoke of to you is coming against the castle to seek to destroy this lady, and a great host with him.'

And then[2] Owein asked the maiden,[2] 'Has the Countess a horse and armour?' 'She has', said the
W.B. 253 maiden, 'the best in the world.' 'Will you go to the Countess to ask the loan of a horse and arms for me,' said Owein, 'so that I can go to look at this host?' 'I will go gladly,'[2] said the maiden. And the maid[49] came to the Countess, and told her the whole conversation. The Countess laughed at that.[2] 'Between me and God,' said she, 'I will give him a horse and arms for ever, and never has he possessed a horse and armour better than[50] it, and I am pleased he should take them, lest they be seized by my enemies to-morrow against my will. And I know not what he wants with them.' And they came with a handsome black Gascon horse, and a beechen saddle upon it, and a sufficiency of armour for man and horse.

And Owein[51] equipped himself, and mounted his
R.B. 186 horse and went forth, two *macwy* with him, equipped with horses and arms. And when they came to the Earl's host, they saw neither beginning nor end to it. And Owein asked the *macwyaid* which troop the Earl was in. 'In the troop yonder, in which there are four yellow standards,' said they. 'Two are in front of him,

[49] R.B. 'she'.
[50] R.B. 'equal to'.
[51] W.B. 'he'.

and two behind.' 'Yes,' said Owein, 'go you back, and await me at[52] the castle gate.'

They returned, and Owein[53] rode straight on through the two front troops,[2] until he encountered the Earl, and Owein dragged him out of his saddle, until he was between himself and his saddle-bow. And he turned his horse's head towards the castle. And whatsoever trouble he had, he came with the Earl, until he came[2] W.B. 254
to the castle-gate, where[17] the *macwyaid* [were awaiting him].[2] And they came inside, and Owein gave the Earl as a gift to the Countess, and said to her thus.[2] 'See here is the price of your blessed ointment which I got from you.'[2]

And the host pitched its tents around the castle, and the Earl gave her back the two earldoms in return for his life, and for his liberty he gave half of his own dominions, and all her gold, and her silver, and her jewels, and hostages thereon.

And Owein went away, and the Countess offered him herself and all her dominions; but Owein wished nothing but to travel through the uttermost parts of the world and desert places.

And as he was thus[2] travelling, he heard a loud shriek inside a wood, and a second, and a third. And thither came Owein,[51] and when he came there,[1] he saw a rocky hill in the middle of the wood, and a grey rock on the side of the hill, and there was a cleft in the rock, and in the cleft there was a serpent, and a pitch-black[54] lion was near the serpent.[55] And when the lion

52 R.B. 'near'.
53 R.B. 'he'.
54 W.B. 'pure white'.
55 R.B. 'rock'.

tried to go away, the serpent darted forward to bite[53] him. And then he gave a shriek.[2] Thereupon[2] Owein unsheathed his sword, and drew near to the rock. And
R.B. 187 as the serpent was coming out from the rock, Owein struck it with the sword, until it was in two pieces on the ground.[2] And he dried his sword,[1] and returned to the road as before.

He saw the lion following him, and sporting around
W.B. 255 him like a greyhound which he had reared himself. And they journeyed on throughout the day until eventide. And when it was time for Owein to rest he dismounted, and let his horse loose to graze[2] in a wooded flat meadow. And Owein[53] kindled a fire, and when Owein had got the fire going, the lion had with him enough fire-wood for three nights. And the lion vanished from him; and immediately behold the lion came to him with a large beautiful roebuck. He threw it down in front of Owein, and went with him to lie down in front of[2] the fire. And Owein took the roebuck, and flayed it, and put chops on spits around the fire, and gave the whole[2] buck to the lion to eat, save them.

And while Owein was so doing he heard a loud groan, and a second, and a third close to him. And Owein asked if it was a being of this world[57] who had done so.[2] 'Yes, indeed,' said the person. 'Who are you?' said Owein. 'Of a truth,' said she, 'Lunet am I, the handmaiden of the Lady of the Fountain.' 'What

[56] W.B. 'at'.

[57] 'a gofyn a oruc Owein ae dyn bydawl'. Sir J. M. Jones translates 'And Owein asked whether it was a living man . . .'

are you doing here?' said Owein. 'Imprisoned am I,' said she, 'because of the knight[58] who came from the Emperor[2] Arthur's[1] court to desire the Countess in marriage.[1] He was with her a short time; and he wandered back to Arthur's court, and has never returned. And my companion was he, whom I loved best in the whole[2] world. Two of the Countess' pages of the chamber defamed him in my presence,[2] and called him a deceiver and traitor,[2] whereupon I said that their two bodies could not compete with his one body. And thereupon they imprisoned me in this stone W.B. 256
prison,[59] and said that my life should not remain in my body if he came not to rescue me by an appointed day. And the appointed day is no further than two days hence. And I have none to seek him. And he is[60] R.B. 188
Owein, the son of Uryen.' 'Are you certain', said he,[2] 'that if that knight[58] knew this, he would come to rescue you?' 'Certain, between me and God,' said she.

And when the chops were sufficiently cooked, Owein divided them into two halves between himself and the maiden. And they ate. And after that, they talked until it was day next day. Next day Owein asked the maiden if there was a place where he could get food and rest that night. 'There is, lord,' said she. 'Go yonder,' said she, 'through the ford,[2] and travel along the road by the river bank; and at the end of a while you will see a great fort, and towers in plenty upon it. And the Earl

[58] W.B. 'young man'.
[59] 'Ilestyr', vessel. Vide Loth's note, vol. ii, p. 181.
[60] W.B. 'was'.

who owns that fort is the best man for food there is in the world,[1] and there can you tarry to-night.'

And never did sentry keep watch over his lord as well as the lion kept watch over Owein that[61] night.

And then Owein equipped his horse, and travelled straight on through the ford until he saw the fort. And Owein[53] came to the fortress, and they welcomed him there honourably, and groomed his horse perfectly, and put plenty of food in front of him. And the lion went to lie down in the horse's manger, so that none of the fort ventured to go near the horse on that account.[2] And Owein was certain that never had he seen a place
End of W.B. 256 with such good service as that. But every person there was as sad as if death were upon them all. And they went to eat, and the Earl sat on one side of Owein, and the one daughter he had on the other side of Owein. And Owein was certain that he had never seen a maid more beautiful than she. And the lion came between Owein's two feet under the table. And Owein fed him with every food that there was there for himself. And
R.B. 189 Owein found no fault there like unto the sadness of the people. And half-way through eating, the Earl greeted Owein.

'High time is it', said Owein, 'for you to be joyful.' 'God knows, not on your account are we sad; but because of the coming of a cause of sadness and anxiety.' 'What is that?' said Owein. 'Two sons had I, and my two sons went yesterday into the mountains to hunt. There is there a wild beast, which kills men and devours

[61] W.B. 'the previous'.

them, and he has seized my sons. And to-morrow is the day appointed between me and him to give him this maiden, otherwise he will slay my sons in my presence. And the semblance of a man has he, but he is not smaller than a giant.' 'Of a truth,' said Owein, 'that is a pity. And which one of those will you do?' 'God knows,' said the Earl, 'it would be more chaste of me that my sons whom he holds should be slain against my will than that I should give my daughter to him without my consent, for him to violate and to ravage.' And they talked of other things, and there Owein tarried that night.

And next day, in the morning, they heard a tumult, immense in size. It was the big man coming with the two sons with him. And the Earl wished straightway to guard the fort, and to ensure the safety of his two sons. Owein put his armour upon him, and went out and tested the man, and the lion behind him. And when the man saw Owein in arms, he charged him and fought with him. And the lion fought with the big man far better than did Owein. 'Between me and God,' said the man to Owein, 'it would not be hard for me to fight with you, were the animal not with you.' And then Owein drove the lion into the fort, and closed the gate on him, and came as before to fight with the big man. And the lion roared when it heard the trouble that Owein was in, and he climbed up until he was on the Earl's hall, and from the hall on to the battlements, R.B. 190 and from the battlements he leapt down till he was with Owein, and the lion struck the big man with his paw

on top of his shoulder, until his paw went through down to between his hips, so that the whole of his entrails could be seen slipping out of him. And then the big man fell down dead.

And then Owein gave the Earl his two sons, and the Earl invited Owein in, and Owein would not, but came straightway to the meadow where Lunet was. And there he saw a great kindling of fire. And two curly auburn-haired handsome youths going with the maiden to throw her into the fire. And Owein asked what complaint they had against the maid, and they declared to him their dispute, as the maiden had declared it the night before. 'And Owein has failed her, and hence we are burning her.' 'Of a truth,' said Owein, 'he was a good knight. And it is strange to me that if he had known that this had befallen the maiden, he has not come to rescue her; but if you will have me instead of him, I will go with you.' 'We will,' said the youths, 'by the Being who made us'; and they went to attack Owein, and trouble did Owein get from the two youths. And thereupon the lion strengthened Owein, and they vanquished the youths. And then they said, 'Ah, sir, we did not contract to fight save with you yourself; and it is more difficult for us to fight with yonder animal than with you.' And thereupon Owein put the lion in the place the maiden had been in prison, and made a stone wall against the door. And he went to fight with the men as before. And Owein had not yet recovered his strength; and strong were the two youths against him. And the lion kept roaring all the

time, because of the trouble Owein was in, and the lion broke through the wall until he found a way out. And he quickly slew one of the youths, and forthwith slew the other. And so they saved Lunet from being burnt. R.B. 191

And then Owein went, with Lunet with him, to the dominions of the Lady of the Fountain. And when he came thence, he took the Countess with him to Arthur's court. And she was his wife as long as she lived.

And then he followed the road to the court of the Black Oppressor,[62] and fought with him, and the lion did not leave Owein until he had conquered the Black Oppressor. And when he followed the road to the court of the Black Oppressor, he reached the hall, and there he saw four-and-twenty women, the most beautiful any one had ever seen. And the clothes upon them were not worth four-and-twenty pieces of silver, and sad were they as death. And Owein asked them the reason of their sadness; and they said that they were the daughters of earls, and that they had not come there without the man each of them loved best along with her. 'And when we came here we received joy and respect, and they made us drunk. And when we were drunk, the devil who owns this fort came and slew all our husbands, and took away our horses and clothes, and our gold and silver, and the corpses of our husbands are in the same house, and many dead bodies with them. And, behold, sir, the cause of our sadness. And evil it seems to us, sir, that you come here, lest evil befall you.'

[62] 'Du Traws'.

And Owein felt pity thereat, and went out for a stroll. And he saw a knight coming to him, and welcoming him with joy and affection, as if he had been his brother. This was the Black Oppressor. ' God knows,' said Owein, ' not to attain to your joy did I come here.' ' God knows,' said he, ' you shall not get it.'

R.B. 192 And thereupon they charged, and they attacked one another recklessly, and Owein threw him off his horse, and bound his two hands behind his back. And the Black Oppressor sought quarter of Owein, and said to him, ' Lord Owein,' said he, ' it was foretold that you would come here to subdue me, and you have come and done so. A despoiler have I been here, and a house of spoil has my house been. Grant me my life, and I will become a Hospitaller, and I will support this house as a Hospice for the weak and the strong, so long as I live, for your soul's sake.'[63] And Owein agreed thereto. And Owein tarried there that night.

And next day he took the four-and-twenty women and their horses, and their clothes, and what they possessed of goods and jewels. And he travelled, and they with him, to Arthur's court. And Arthur had been glad to see him before when he had lost him. Now he was more glad. And whoever of those ladies who wished to abide in Arthur's court, she was allowed to do so, and whoever wished to depart could go.

[63] Despoiler=' yspeilwr '; house of spoil=' yspeilty '; hospitaller=' yspyttywr '; hospice=' yspytty '. There is here a dig at the Knight's Hospitallers, whose hospices in Wales were simply centres of brigandage, in whose jurisdiction the King's writ did not run.

And Owein from that time on abided in Arthur's court as *Penteulu*; and he was beloved of him until he went to his own dominions. They were the Three Hundred swords of Cynferchyn[64] and the flight of Ravens.[65] And wherever Owein went with them with him he conquered.

And this story is called the story of the Lady of the Fountain.

[64] 'Cynferchyn'=of the family of Cynfarch, the father of Urien Rheged.

[65] The Ravens. For the Ravens see also Rhonabwy. They remain one of the mysteries of Welsh story.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE TO PEREDUR

THERE are two complete texts of Peredur, one in the Red Book (pp. 193–243), and one in the White Book (cols. 117–78). There are very considerable differences in the texts up to R.B. 212, W.B. 141; differences not merely in orthography, but in actual phraseology. The general outline is similar; but many passages occur in the one text which do not appear in the other. Thereafter, this dissimilarity ceases, and the later part of the story, subject to orthographical changes and the like, is almost identical in both texts.

In addition to these two texts, there are two fragments in the White Book. That, hereafter referred to as Text B, occupies pages 286–90. It begins at the same point as the principal texts, but ends abruptly at a point corresponding with R.B. p. 202, line 17, and W.B. col. 129, line 17. The text, hereafter referred to as Text C, occupies cols. 605–48 of the White Book. The beginning is missing. The commencement of the remnant corresponds with R.B. p. 196, line 11, and W.B. col. 120, line 34. Cols. 633–6 inclusive are missing; and the text ends ultimately to correspond with R.B. p. 232, line 6, and W.B. col. 165, line 26. It does not end abruptly; but closes with the episode of the Empress of Christinobyl. This fact points to the conclusion that the later episodes in the principal texts are subsequent additions. So far as they go, Texts B

and C tell a similar story to the principal texts; but they are so radically different in expression that it has been found necessary to translate them in full separately. The textual differences are so great that it would be impossible to show them except by means of a very voluminous body of notes. One important point is that Texts B and C agree in assigning to Gwalchmai the part played in the full texts by Owein ap Uryen, and this fact has a considerable bearing on the semi-historic and romantic figure of Owein. In addition, however, the story is told in a totally different manner. There are also very great differences between Text B and Text C.

This fact is important, because, though it is clear that the originators of the four texts had some common source, they did not all proceed to simply translate or copy out their original. They took their original, and proceeded to tell the common story each in his own way. What the common original was it is difficult, if not impossible, to say. Much has been written on the subject of the story of Peredur; but it is quite clear that the Welsh version is not a translation, not even a *résumé* of Chrétien de Troyes; and it would seem that Chrétien may have drawn on the same original as the Welsh writers, expanding and altering it, as he related the common story. One thing is indubitable, and that is that Peredur, the original of Sir Percevale, is an historic Welsh figure; and it is equally clear that there were stories, now lost, extant about him in the old Welsh cycle. In that sense, the story of Peredur, or Percevale, is of Welsh origin. Some of the episodes contained in

the story, as we have it, seem to be distinctively Celtic; and the two striking characteristics of Peredur, namely that he possessed the Paladyr Hir and that he was the highest type of male chastity, seem to be of definitely Celtic origin.

But, whatever form the original of Peredur may have taken in old Welsh romance, the story we now have is far more typical of Norman-French romance than it is of Welsh. The armour and trappings, the constant presence of the joust, the type of conversation, the suggestiveness in regard to women (toned down, from the hardly concealed contempt of Chrétien de Troyes, to suit a different audience) are all continental. The disappearance, too, of the definite geographical setting, which gives so vivid a point to the untouched Welsh stories, is also continental. The setting of it might be anywhere or nowhere. Besides, there is an almost complete absence of reality in the tale. Possibly, the original Welsh story crossed to the Continent, was given an entirely new form there, and then came back to Wales, to be retold in Welsh in its new guise.

'Peredur' is of importance because it helps to illustrate how the new Norman-French culture found its way into Welsh literature, supplanting to a large extent the older, and to us far finer, Welsh type of literature.

The story is the fourth in order of the Arthurian cycle contained in the Mabinogion. It has departed entirely from the rugged grandeur of Kulhwch and Olwen; it has none of the polished beauty of the

Dream of Rhonabwy; it has not as much of the mystical, romantic, Celtic element in it as is to be found in Owein and Lunet. It is, however, much nearer in character to the latter story than it is to any other. It does preserve some of the older Celtic spirit, though that tends to become more and more obscured, until in the last story of all, that of Gereint, that spirit has practically disappeared altogether. 'Peredur' is far advanced on that road to Norman-French formalism which ultimately led to the destruction of the whole of the romantic element in literature. As a piece of Welsh literary composition, apart from certain passages of considerable beauty, it is not to be compared with the Dream of Rhonabwy; and its main interest in Welsh literature is not so much literary or even romantic, as historical, in that it marks a definite stage in the great change in cultural taste, consequent on the impact of the Norman-French on Wales. Structurally, the story is stilted and clumsily built; and we do not pass in it from episode to episode with that ease which is so conspicuous a feature of Kulhwch and Olwen; and the attempt at the end to give a coherence to the episodes, which have been related before, can only be described as a failure. It is not a complete work of art, however beautiful passages here and there may be. One cannot help feeling that the natural, spontaneous beauty of indigenous Welsh literature has been sacrificed in an effort to conform to a new alien standard of taste.

R.B. 193
W.B. 117

EARL EFRAWC owned the earldom of[3] the North.[4] And seven sons had he. And Efrawc maintained himself mostly,[5] not from his dominions, but from tournaments and wars and combats. And as it often is to him who follows combats and[1] wars, he was slain, he[2] and his six sons. And his seventh son was called Peredur;[6] and he was the youngest of the seven sons.[2] And he was not of age to go to combat or to war. Had he been of age, he would have been slain as his father had been slain, and his brothers.

His mother was a sagacious discreet woman, and she was very anxious[7] about her one[1] son and her dominions. So she decided to flee with her son[2] to a wilderness and an unfrequented[1] waste, and to abandon habitations. She permitted[8] no one in her company except women, and boys, and modest, spiritless[2] men, who were not capable nor fit either to combat or to war. No one, in the hearing of the boy, would dare to mention[9] either horses or arms, lest the boy should set his mind on them.[10]

1 Not in W.B. 2 Not in R.B. 3 W.B 'in'.

4 'Gogledd', the North, refers to northern England and southern Scotland. Efrawc is the old British chief from whom York (Eboracum) derives its name; and this fact no doubt induced the narrators to localize Peredur.

5 R.B. 'yn vwyaf', mostly; W.B., 'benhaf', chiefly.

6 R.B. reads, 'he had a seventh son, Peredur was his name'.

7 W.B. 'thought'. 8 W.B. 'took'.

9 R.B. reads, 'no one would dare, where the boy might perceive, to muster'.

10 W.B. reads, 'lest he should set his mind on them'.

And the boy went into the far forest every day to play, and to shoot with bow and arrows.[11] And one day he saw a flock of goats belonging to his mother,[12] and two hinds standing near the goats. And the boy wondered at seeing those two[13] without horns, and horns on every one of[2] the others. And he thought that they had been astray for a long time, and that, for that R.B. 194
reason, they had lost their horns. And by prowess and W.B. 118
swiftness of foot he forced the hinds, along with the goats, into the house which was at the end of the forest for the goats.

Peredur[14] returned home[2] to his mother[1]. 'Mother of mine,'[2] said he, 'I have seen a strange thing hard by. Two of your goats, after going wild,[15] have lost their horns, because of the length of their wandering beneath the trees. And no man has had more trouble than I have had in driving them in.' And thereupon every one arose and came to see. And when they saw the hinds, they marvelled greatly, [for no one had either the prowess or swiftness of foot so as to be able to overtake them.][2]

One day they saw three horsemen coming along the horseman's road by the side of the forest. These were the three horsemen;[16] Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar, Gweir, the son of[17] Gwystyl, and Owein, the son of

[11] Lit. 'pieces of wood and sticks', 'llysgyon ac yskyryon'; W.B. reads 'hollywood arrows'.
[12] R.B. 'his mother's flock of goats'.
[13] R.B. 'marvelled greatly that those two were . . .'.
[14] W.B. 'he'.
[15] Lit. 'after wildness had gone into them'.
[16] W.B. 'they'. [17] R.B. 'Geneir'.

Uryen. And Owein was keeping the track, pursuing the knight who had divided the apples in Arthur's court.[18]

'My mother,' said Peredur, 'what are those yonder?' 'They are angels, my son,' said she. 'By my faith,' said Peredur, 'I will go as an angel along with them.' And Peredur[14] came to the road to meet the knights.[19]

'Say, my soul,' said Owein, 'have you seen a knight go by here,[2] either to-day or yesterday?' 'I do not know', said he, 'what a knight is.' 'The same thing as I am,' said Owein. 'If you would tell me what[20] I ask of you,
W.B. 119 I would tell you what you ask of me.' 'I will tell you willingly,' said Owein.[1] 'What is this?' said Peredur,[14] regarding the saddle. 'It is[1] a saddle,' said Owein. And Peredur[21] inquired fully[1] what the accoutrements were[22] which he saw on the men and the horses and the armour, and what they wanted them for, and what they were able to do with them. Owein explained to him everything in full, what everything was, and what he could do with them.[23] 'Go forward,' said Peredur, 'I
R.B. 195 have seen the like of that which you have asked about. And I myself will follow you [as a knight this very hour']².

Then Peredur returned to where[2] his mother and retinue were.[2] 'Mother,' said he, 'those, here awhile ago,[24] were not angels, but honourable[25] knights.' Then

[18] The story of this knight is not to be found in the Welsh stories. [19] R.B. 'them'. [20] R.B. 'the thing'.
[21] R.B. 'he'. [22] W.B. 'everything was'.
[23] R.B. 'and what could be done with them'.
[24] W.B. 'yonder'.
[25] The word 'honourable', or 'honoured', would, perhaps, be

his mother[26] fell into a dead faint. And Peredur went straight[2] to the place[1] where the horses were which carried firewood for them, and brought food and drink from habited places to the waste. And he took a scraggy dapple-grey horse, which he thought the strongest, and he pressed a pack-saddle on it as a saddle, [and with twigs Peredur imitated the trappings he had seen on the horses and on all the other things.[1]]

And Peredur[14] returned to where[2] his mother was. Thereon, behold,[2] the Countess recovered from her swoon. 'Yes,' said she,[2] 'my son, do you wish to set forth?' 'Yes' said he, 'with your permission.'[1] 'Stay, I have advice before you set out.' 'Gladly,'[1] said he, 'speak quickly, and I will stay for it.'[2] 'Go straight on,' said she, 'to Arthur's court, where are the best of men, and the most generous, and the bravest. Where you see a church, say your paternoster to it. Should you see food and drink and you need it, take it yourself, if it be not given you out of courtesy and kindness. If you hear a cry of distress, and above all the cry of a woman, W.B. 120 go to it. If you see a fair jewel, take it and give it to another; thereby you will receive honour. Should you see a fair woman, woo her, even if she desires you not; she will make you, for that reason,[1] a better man and a more flourishing chief than before.' [And with twigs Peredur imitated the trappings he had seen on everything.[2]]

And [after that discourse, Peredur mounted his horse,

better rendered 'dubbed' or 'initiated'. The sense of the phrase is that they had received the honour of knighthood.

[26] W.B. 'she'.

and[1]] with a handful of sharp-pointed darts in his hand, he set forward. And he was two days and two nights travelling in the forest[1] wilds and in many a[1] desert place,[1] without food and without drink. And then he came to a great lonely wood, and far within the wood, he saw a fine open clearing,[27] and in the clearing he saw
R.B. 196 a tent, and, in the illusion of a church, he said his paternoster to the tent. And he came towards the tent, and the door of the tent was open. And there was a golden chair near the door, and a lovely auburn-haired maiden was sitting in the chair, with a frontlet of gold on her forehead, and sparkling stones in the frontlet, and a massive gold ring on her hand. And Peredur dismounted, and came straight[1] inside. And joyful was the maiden towards him and welcomed him.

At the end of the tent he saw a table[28] and two flasks full of wine, and two loaves of white bread and chops from a sucking-pig. 'My mother,' said Peredur, 'told me, wherever I saw food and drink, to take it.' 'Come to the table,[28] sir, gladly,[2] and welcome to you.'[29]
W.B. 121 Thereupon[1] Peredur came to the table and[2] took half the food and the liquor for himself, and left the other half entirely[2] for the maid. And when Peredur[14] had finished eating, he came and bent on his knee in front of the maiden.[30] 'My mother,' said he, 'told me, where I saw a fair jewel, to take it.' 'Take it, my soul,' said she, ['I will not refuse it you.'][2] Peredur took the

[27] W.B. 'clearing of fields'. [28] R.B. 'food'.
[29] W.B. 'the grace of God be with you'.
[30] W.B. 'arose, and came to where the maiden was'.

ring, [and fell on his knee, and gave the maiden a kiss,][2] and he took his horse and set forth.

Thereafter, behold, the knight who owned the tent came. He was the Proud Man of the Clearing. And he saw the footprint of the horse. 'Tell me,' said he to the maiden, 'who has been here in my absence.' 'A man strange in appearance, lord,' said she. And she explained the appearance of Peredur and the object of his journey[31] in full.[1] 'Tell me,' said he, 'was he with you, [and did he do violence to you.'][1] 'He was not, by my faith,' said she, 'nor any wrong did he do to me.'[1] 'By my faith, I believe you not, and until I meet him, to avenge my disgrace and my wrath, you shall not remain in the same place[32] together two nights.'[1] And the knight rose up to seek Peredur.

Meanwhile, Peredur travelled straight[33] towards Arthur's court. And before he came to Arthur's court, R.B. 197
the other knight came to the[34] court. And he gave[35] a massive gold ring to the man at[36] the gate to hold his horse. And then he came straight[2] to the hall, to the place[1] where Arthur and his bodyguard were, and Gwenhwyfar and her maids. And a page of the chamber was serving Gwenhwyfar with a golden[2] W.B. 122
goblet. And thereupon[1] the knight [took the goblet from Gwenhwyfar's hand, and][2] threw the drink that was in it on her face and breast,[37] and gave Gwen-

[31] Anwyl gives the meaning as 'gait'. [32] R.B. 'house'.
[33] R.B. 'set out'. [34] R.B. 'Arthur's'.
[35] R.B. 'put'. [36] R.B. 'in the door of'.
[37] 'bronfoll', lit. an article of dress covering the breast; a stomacher.

hwyfar a hard blow on the ear, and said, 'If there be any one so fearless as[38] to strive for this goblet with me, and to avenge the[39] insult to Gwenhwyfar, let him come after me to the meadow[40], and I will await him there.' And the knight[41] took his horse, and repaired to the meadow. Then all of the bodyguard[42] hung down their heads,[43] lest they[44] should be implored to go to avenge the insult to Gwenhwyfar. And they thought that no one would commit so daring[45] a deed as that, unless he had prowess and passion or enchantment and[2] magic, so that none could take vengeance upon him.

Thereupon, behold Peredur came into the hall on a bony dapple-grey horse,[46] and absolutely[2] slovenly trappings on him, [and ill-suited to so noble a court as that.][1] And[2] Cai was standing in the middle of the floor[2] of the hall. 'Tell me,' said Peredur, 'you tall man yonder. Where is Arthur?' 'What do you want with Arthur?' said Cai. 'My mother commanded me to come to Arthur to be honoured as an honourable knight.' 'By my faith,' said Cai, 'you come[47] too ill-furnished with horse and arms.' And thereupon he was perceived by the bodyguard, who began to deride and

[38] W.B. 'If there be any', said he, 'who wills . . .'

[39] W.B. 'this'.

[40] 'gweirglodd' = hay-meadow; here and elsewhere it implies the tilting ground in front of a medieval castle.

[41] R.B. has 'march', by error for 'marchauc'.

[42] W.B. 'there'. [43] W.B. 'faces'.

[44] R.B. 'one'. [45] W.B. 'such'.

[46] 'ceffyl', an ordinary horse as distinct from 'march', a charger.

[47] R.B. 'are'.

hurl[48] sticks at him; [and they were glad that such a one should have come, in order to make them forget the other affair.][2]

Thereupon, behold, a[49] dwarf came in, who had W.B. 123
come a year before that to Arthur's court, he and a female dwarf, to seek hospitality[50] of Arthur, and that they had obtained from Arthur.[2] And, notwithstanding that,[2] throughout the year neither of them had[51] spoken one word to anybody. And when the dwarf perceived Peredur, 'Ha, ha,' said he, 'the grace of R.B. 198
God be with you, fair Peredur, son of Efrawc, chief of warriors and the flower of knights.' 'Of a truth, man,'[2] said Cai, 'it is evil conduct to be a year in Arthur's court dumb, free to choose your fellow-talker, and to choose your victuals,[2] and to call a man such as this, in the presence of Arthur[52] and his bodyguard, [and to testify that he is][1] the chief of warriors and the flower of knights.' And he gave him a blow on the ear till he was on the back of his head on[2] the ground senseless.

Thereupon, behold the female dwarf came.[2] 'Ha, ha,' said she, 'the grace of God be with you, fair Peredur, son of Efrawc, flower of warriors and candle of knights.' 'Yes, maid,' said Cai, 'it is ill conduct to be a year in Arthur's court, without saying one word to anybody,[2] and to call such a man as this to-day, [in the presence of Arthur and his warriors, the flower of

[48] R.B. 'hurled'.
[49] W.B. 'the'.
[50] Anwyl renders 'licence'.
[51] W.B. 'they had not'.
[52] W.B. 'the Emperor'.

warriors and the candle of knights.'][53] And Cai[14] kicked her until she was senseless on the ground.[1]

'Long man,' said Peredur then,[2] 'show me where
W.B. 124 Arthur is.' 'Stop your noise,' said Cai, 'go after the knight who went from here to the meadow, and take the goblet from him, and overthrow him, and take his horse and arms, and after that, you shall get your honour as an honourable knight.' 'Long man,' said he,[2] 'that will I myself do'; and he turned the horse's head, and so out to the meadow.

And when he came, the knight was riding his horse[2] about[1] in the meadow,[2] greatly arrogant in the[54] power and bravery he thought he had.[1] 'Say,' said the knight, 'have you seen any one of the Court coming after me?' 'The long man who was there', said he, 'commanded me to overthrow you, and take the goblet and the horse and the arms for myself.' 'Shut up,' said the knight, 'go back to the court, and command Arthur from me, that either he himself or another come to joust with me. And if he come not quickly, I will not wait for him.' 'By my faith,' said Peredur, 'choose you whether, willingly or unwillingly, I will have the horse and arms and goblet.' And thereupon, the knight rushed at him wrathfully, and, with his arm uplifted, gave[55] him a most grievous blow with the butt-end of his lance
R.B. 199 between the shoulder and the neck. 'Aha, youth,' said Peredur, 'my mother's servants played not so with me. I will play with you like this.' And he shot him with

53 R.B. 'in the fashion you have called him'.
54 W.B. 'his'. 55 R.B. 'struck'.

a sharp pointed dart,[56] which hit him in the eye, until it came out[57] through the back of the neck, and he lay stone-dead on the ground.[58]

'Of a truth,' said Owein, the son of Uryen, to Cai, W.B. 125 'evil did you to the fool man whom you sent after the knight. And one of two things has happened to him:[1] either he has been slain or overthrown. Should his overthrow by the knight[1] have occurred, the rank of a worthy man of the court[1] will he be held to have by the knight, and an everlasting shame to Arthur and his warriors. If his slaying has befallen, the shame will be just the same, and, in addition, their sin upon him. And behold my faith,[1] I will not show my face until I[2] go to learn what chance has befallen him.'

And thereupon[2] Owein came straight[2] to the meadow, and when he came,[2] Owein beheld[1] Peredur was[2] dragging the man behind him[2] the length of the meadow. 'What are you doing that for?' said Owein.[59] 'This iron coat', said Peredur, 'will never come off him. Methinks that[1] it is a part of himself.' Thereupon Owein stripped off the arms and clothes. 'Behold, my soul,' said he, 'a horse and arms for you now[2] better than the others. Take them joyfully, and come with

[56] The word used is 'gaflach'=dart, spear, not 'gwaew', spear, lance, javelin. The 'gwaew' was the ordinary Welsh javelin, the principal weapon of the North; and the word was later applied to a lance. 'Gaflach' is used to indicate a less formidable weapon than 'gwaew'; and refers, of course, to the ludicrous type of arms Peredur fashioned for himself on setting forth.

[57] R.B. 'was'.

[58] R.B. 'died instantaneously'.

[59] W.B. 'Ah, sir,' said Owein, 'stop, I will take the arms off'.

me to Arthur, and you will get honour[60] as an honourable knight, for you are worthy of it.'[1] 'May I never keep my face, if I go,' said Peredur. 'But, do you take from me the goblet to Gwenhwyfar, and tell Arthur that, wherever I may be, I will be a man to him, and if I can render him help and service, I will do so. And tell him that I will never come to court until I meet the long man, who is there, to avenge the insult to the dwarf and the dwarfess.'

Thereupon, Owein came back[1] straight[2] to the court, and related the adventure, and the threat to Cai, to Arthur and Gwenhwyfar and to all of the bodyguard.

And thereupon Peredur set forth.[61] And as he was
R.B. 200; W.B. 126 proceeding, behold a knight met him. 'Whence come you?' said the knight. 'I come from Arthur's court,' said Peredur.[14] 'Are you a man to Arthur?' said he.[2] 'Yes, by my faith,' said Peredur.[14] 'A fine place you are in, being identified[62] with Arthur.' 'Why?' said Peredur. 'I will tell you why,' said he. 'An outlaw from and a frustrator of[2] Arthur have I ever been, and whatever men of his I have encountered, I have slain.' And there was no more between them than that. They jousted. And it was not long before Peredur hurled him until he was on[63] the ground over his horse's crupper. The knight sought quarter of him.[1] 'You shall have quarter,' said Peredur, 'by giving[1] your oath to go to

[60] R.B. 'to be honoured'. [61] W.B. 'travelled onwards'.
[62] 'yn ymardelw' = 'to be on the avouchment of', i.e. 'to be in the service of'. [63] R.B. 'to'.

Arthur's court, and to declare to Arthur that it was I who overthrew you in his honour and service. And tell him I will never come[64] to the Court until I get vengeance on the long man who is there,[2] for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.' And the knight gave[65] his faith thereto, and[1] set out straight to Arthur's court, and told the adventure in full[66] and the threat to Cai.

And then Peredur journeyed onwards,[67] and in the same week he encountered sixteen knights. And Peredur[14] overthrew them all[2] disgracefully[1]; and they came straightway[68] to Arthur's court, with the same sort of[1] message as had come[1] with the first knight[1] he had overthrown[2] and the same threat from Peredur[1] to Cai. And reproof did Cai get from Arthur and the bodyguard,[2] and Cai[14] was anxious thereat.

Meanwhile Peredur set out onwards. And at last[2] W.B. 127 he came to a great lonely wood, and on the edge of the wood there was a lake. And[1] on the other side of the lake [2] there was a great court and a handsome fortress[69] around it. On the bank of the lake he saw[70] a handsome[1] grey-haired man, sitting on a cushion of brocaded silk, and a garment of brocaded silk on him. And his servants were fishing in a boat on the[71] lake. When the grey-haired man saw Peredur coming he arose and repaired to the court.[72] And the old[1] man was lame. Thereupon Peredur came straight[73] to the court, and

64 W.B. 'go'. 65 W.B. 'on'. 66 R.B. 'did that'.
67 R.B. 'set forth straightway'. 68 R.B. 'went'.
69 R.B. 'a fair fortress'. 70 W.B. 'there was'.
71 R.B. 'that'. 72 R.B. '(went) to the fort'.
73 R.B. 'repaired'.

R.B. 201 the gate was open, and he came into the hall. And when he came[2] the grey-haired man was sitting on a cushion of brocaded silk,[2] and a large steady fire was burning in front of him.[74] And the bodyguard and host rose to meet Peredur, and they dismounted and[2] disarrayed him, and the man [struck his hand on the end of the cushion, and][2] commanded the *macwy* to come and[2] sit down on the end of the[1] cushion. And they sat down together and talked. And when it was time the tables were set, and they went to eat. And Peredur sat by the side of the man who owned the court.[75]

After finishing eating, the man asked Peredur, 'Do you know how to use the sword[76] well?' 'I do not know,' said Peredur, 'that if I were to get teaching, I would not know (how to do it.)' 'He who knows', said he,[2] 'how to play well[1] with the single-stick and shield should know how to wield a sword.' The grey-
W.B. 128 haired[2] man had two sons, a boy with yellow hair, and a boy with auburn hair. 'Arise, boys,' said he, 'to play with single-sticks and shields.' And thereupon[1] the boys went to play with single-sticks.[1] 'Say, my soul,' said the man, 'which of the boys, think you,[1] plays the better?' 'My opinion is', said Peredur, 'the yellow-haired boy could have drawn blood a long while ago[2] from the auburn-haired boy,[77] if he had chosen.' 'My soul, arise, and[1] take the single-stick and shield from the hand of the auburn-haired youth, and draw

74 W.B. 'starting to burn'.
75 W.B. 'he was put to sit and eat on one side of the man'.
76 'llad a chledyf'. 77 W.B. 'other'.

blood from the yellow-haired boy, if you can.' Peredur arose, [and took the stick and shield,[2]] [and went to play with the yellow-haired boy.[1]] And he lifted up his arm [against the yellow-haired boy[2]] [and struck him a mighty blow,[1]] so that his eyebrow fell over his eye, and blood ran therefrom in streams.[2] 'Yes, my soul,' said the man, 'come and sit down now. You will be the best man at wielding a sword in this island. And I am your uncle, the brother of your mother. And abide with me awhile[2] to learn the customs [and arms of countries][1] and manners, [seemliness and happiness and gentle bearing].[1] And give up now the language of[78] your mother, and I myself will be your teacher, and will honour you as an honourable knight henceforth. And thus do.[79] Though you should see a thing that[80] is R.B. 202 strange to you, ask not concerning it. If none has the courtesy to tell you, the shame will not be yours, but mine, for I am your teacher.' And manifold honour and service did they partake of. And when it was time, they went to sleep.

When day first came, Peredur arose and took his W.B. 129 horse, and started forth with his uncle's permission. And he came to a great lonely[1] wood, and at the end of the wood he came to a flat[2] meadow, and at the other side of the flat[1] meadow he saw a great fort and a beautiful court,[2] and Peredur repaired to the court.[81] And the gate he found open, and he entered the hall.

[78] i.e. 'stop quoting her as an authority'.
[79] W.B. 'henceforth thus do'.
[80] W.B. 'that which'. [81] R.B. 'that place'.

And when he came in,[2] there he found[1] a handsome grey-haired man was[2] sitting at the side of the hall, and many *macwyaid* around him. And they[1] all[2] arose with honour[1] to meet [the *macwy*, and their courtesy and service was good to[2]] him; and they[2] made him sit on one side of the man[82] who owned the court. And they talked. And when it was time[83] to go to food, Peredur was made[84] to sit and eat[2] on one side of the gentleman during the meal.[1] And after finishing eating and drinking to their desire,[85] the *gwrda* asked Peredur[86] if he knew how to wield the sword. 'Were I to get teaching, said Peredur, 'I think I would know.'

There was a huge iron[2] staple on the floor of the hall; a warrior could just grasp it.[87] 'Take yonder sword,' said the man to Peredur, 'and smite the iron staple.' And Peredur rose up,[2] and smote the staple till it was[1]
W.B. 130 in two, and the sword in two. 'Put the pieces together and unite them.' Peredur put the pieces[88] together, and they united as before. And a second time he smote until he broke[2] the staple, until it was[1] in two pieces and the sword in two. And as before they united. And the third time he struck a like blow, and put them together, and[89] neither staple nor sword would unite. 'Yes,
R.B. 203 boy,' said the man,[14] 'come and sit you down now,[1]

[82] W.B. 'gwrda'. [83] W.B. has 'time came'.
[84] W.B. 'he was put'.
[85] W.B. 'as long as they enjoyed it'. [86] W.B. 'him'.
[87] Lit. 'the grasp of a warrior upon it'. [88] R.B. 'them'.
[89] W.B. 'until he broke the staple into two, and the sword into two'. 'Put them together and unite them'. 'Peredur, for the third time, put them together, but . . .'

and the blessing of God[90] be upon you. You are the best man in the kingdom at wielding a sword. Two thirds of your valour have you acquired; the third is not acquired. And after you have acquired it wholly, it will avail no one to strive with you.[91] Your uncle am I, brother to your mother. I and[92] the man in whose court[93] you were last night are brothers.'[1] And thereupon Peredur conversed with his uncle.[94]

Thereafter, he saw two servants coming into the hall and going from the hall[2] to the chamber,[95] and a lance with them of immense size, and three torrents of blood[1] all along it[2] running from the point[96] to the ground. And when the retinue[97] saw the servants coming in in that manner, everybody[98] wailed and lamented, so that it was not easy to endure it.[2] Nevertheless, the man interrupted not his speech with Peredur. Though[1] the man[99] did not tell Peredur the meaning of it,[100] he asked him[2] not.

After silence for a short interval, then behold two maidens came inside,[2] with a large dish between them, and a man's head on the dish, and blood all around the head.[101] And then the retinue of the court[102] uttered

90 R.B. 'my blessing'. 91 W.B. 'you will yield to no one'.
92 W.B. 'brother to'. 93 R.B. 'house'.
94 W.B. 'And Peredur sat on one side of his uncle, and they talked'.
95 The hall (neuadd) was the public room of a 'llys'; the 'ystafell' the private chamber.
96 'mwn' = metal; Anwyl renders 'point'; Kuno Meyer 'handle'. 97 W.B. 'every one'. 98 R.B. 'that, they'.
99 R.B. 'he'. 100 W.B. 'what it was'.
101 R.B. 'it'. 102 W.B. 'every one'.

a long cry of anguish and a wailing,[2] until it was wearisome[103] to remain in the same house[104] with them. And at last they ceased therefrom, and sat down as they chose and drank. Thereafter a chamber was prepared for Peredur, and they went to sleep.[105]

W.B. 131 And the next day, in the morning, Peredur arose, and[2] with his uncle's permission he[106] set straight forth. Thence he came to a wood, and far in the wood he heard a cry of distress. [He came towards the place where the cry was, and when he came],[2] he saw a beautiful auburn-haired woman with a horse, and a saddle on it, standing at her hand, and a man's corpse between the woman's two hands.[107] And as she tried to put the body into the saddle, the body fell to[108] the ground. And thereupon[2] she gave a cry of distress. 'Tell me, my sister,' said Peredur,[14] 'what is this cry of distress which is on you?' 'Oh, Peredur, the excommunicated,' said she,[2] 'small relief from my affliction have I ever got from you!' 'Why', said Peredur,[14] 'am I excommunicate?' 'For being the cause of the slaying of your mother. For when you set out against

R.B. 204 her will, a spear leaped into her heart,[1] and therefrom she died. For being the cause of her death[109] are you excommunicate. And the dwarf and the dwarfess you

[103] W.B. 'difficult for any one'. [104] R.B. 'court'.

[105] R.B. 'And at last they became silent. And when it was time to sleep, Peredur went to a fair chamber'.

[106] R.B. 'Peredur'. [107] R.B. 'corpse near by'.

[108] R.B. 'and she was trying to throw the corpse on to the horse into the saddle. It fell to . . .'

[109] R.B. 'that'.

saw in Arthur's court, they[2] were the dwarfs of your father and mother. And I am your foster-sister. And this is my wedded husband,[110] whom the knight, who is in the clearing[1] in the wood, slew. And go you not near him, lest you be killed by him.'[1] 'My sister,' said he,[2] 'you are wrong in blaming me. By reason of my having been so long with you as I have been, barely may I conquer him; and should I be longer, never would I[111] conquer him. Cease further your lamentation, for it will save you no more than before.[112] And I will bury the corpse,[113] and after that,[1] I will go with you[2] to the place[1] where the knight is, to see[114] if I can get vengeance upon him.'[115]

And after burying the man, they came thence[1] to the W.B. 132
place[2] where the knight was, riding his horse[2] arrogantly[1] in the clearing. Immediately the knight asked Peredur, 'Whence come you?' 'I come from Arthur's court.' 'Are you a man to Arthur?' 'Yes, by my faith.' 'A fine place it is[1] to ally yourself with Arthur.' And there was no more than that; they encountered. And Peredur overthrew the knight at once, and the knight[21] sought quarter of Peredur.[1] 'Quarter shall you have,' said Peredur,[1] 'by taking this woman in marriage, and showing her the best reverence and honour you can,[116]

110 'priaut', to distinguish from a husband by custom, i.e., without a religious ceremony.

111 R.B. 'difficult would it be for me to . . .'

112 R.B. 'avails nothing'.

113 R.B. 'man'. 114 W.B. 'and'.

115 W.B. inserts, 'I will do so'.

116 W.B. 'doing the good you can to the woman'.

because you have slain her innocent wedded husband. And by going straight[2] with her[1] to Arthur's court, and declaring to him that it was I who overthrew you in Arthur's honour and service, and telling him that I shall never come[117] to his court until I meet the long man, who is there, to avenge the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.'[118]

And Peredur[21] took a pledge therefor from the knight;[86] and he furnished the woman completely with a horse and clothes[1] to go with him to Arthur's court.[1] And he came straightway to Arthur's court.[2] And he told
R.B. 205 Arthur the happening, and the threat to Cai. And Cai got reproof from Arthur and the bodyguard for having scared away so fine a youth as Peredur from Arthur's court. Said Owein, the son of Uryen,[1] 'That *macwy* will never come to court, till Cai himself[2] goes away from the court.' 'By my faith,' said Arthur, 'I will search the waste places of the Isle of Britain[119] for him until I find him, and then, let both of them do the worst they can to each other.'

W.B. 133 Meanwhile Peredur journeyed onwards,[33] and he came to a great[2] lonely wood. Tracks neither of men nor animals[120] did he see in the wood,[2] only shrubs of wood and rank weeds. And when he came to[121] the end of the wood he saw a large ivy-clad[2] fort, and

[117] W.B. 'not go'. [118] W.B. 'maiden'.

[119] 'Ynys Prydein'. Anwyl renders Scotland. Prydein, no doubt, originally meant Scotland; but 'ynys Prydein' = the Isle of Britain.

[120] W.B. has 'alafoed' = wealth; R.B. 'alanot' = deer, for 'anifeiliaid', animals. [121] R.B. 'at'.

strong towers round about it, and near to the gate the weeds were longer than anywhere else. [And with the shaft of his spear he beat upon the gate.[1]] Thereupon, behold, a lean, red-haired youth at an opening in the battlements.[122] 'Choose, sir,' said he, 'shall I open the gate to you, or shall I announce to him who is chief that you are at the door of[1] the gate.' 'Announce that I am here,' said Peredur,[1] 'and if it be desired that I should come in, I will come.' The *macwy* came back quickly,[2] and opened the gate to Peredur [and came before him to the hall;][2] and when he came into the hall, he saw eighteen youths, lean and red-headed, of the same growth and the same appearance and the same clothing and the same age as the youth who had opened the gate to him. And good was their courtesy and their service, and they dismounted and[2] disarrayed him. And they sat down and talked. Thereupon, behold, five maidens came from the chamber to the hall. And he felt certain that he had never seen on another a countenance of equal beauty[123] as on the chief maid of them. And on her an old garment of ribbed brocaded silk, which had once[1] been good, so that the skin was to be seen through it; and whiter was it than the bloom on the whitest[2] crystal. Her hair and her two eyebrows[124] were blacker than jet. On her cheeks were two small red spots; redder were they than whatever was reddest. R.B. 206; W.B. 134

[122] W.B. 'above his head'.

[123] R.B. 'so fair'.

[124] W.B. has 'dwy lau'=two hands, by error for 'dwy ael'=eyebrows. The correction in R.B. suggests that the scribe was not copying from W.B. but from another manuscript.

The maiden welcomed Peredur, and put her two hands around his neck, and sat down by his side.

It was not long after that he saw two nuns coming in,[2] and a flask full of wine with one of them, and six loaves of white bread with the other. 'Lady,' said they, 'God knows there is not save[2] an equal amount[125] of food and drink as this[2] in yonder convent to-night.' Thereupon they went to eat; and Peredur perceived that the maiden wished to give more of the food and drink to him than to another. 'My sister,' said Peredur,[14] 'I will share the food and drink.' 'Not so, my soul,' said she. 'Behold, by my faith, it is I who will divide.'[126] Peredur took the bread to him, and gave each one alike; and he gave to each one alike the measure of the bowl of the drink.[127] [After finishing eating, 'I would be glad,' said Peredur, 'if I might get a quiet place to sleep.'[2]] [When it was time to go to sleep,[1]] a chamber was made ready for Peredur,[86] and he[128] went to sleep.

'Behold, sister,' said the youths to the fairest and chiefest[1] maid of them,[1] 'what we advise you.' 'What is that?' said she. 'To go to the *macwy* in the upper chamber, and offer yourself to him in the way it may please him, either as a wife to him or as a mistress to him.' 'That', said she, 'is a thing unseemly! I, who have never had anything to do with a man, to offer my-

[125] 'y gymeint arall'. Perhaps = double the amount. In Mod. W. would mean 'twice as much'.

[126] W.B. 'shame on my beard, said he, if it be not so'. The curse on a beard was, in ancient Welsh, a very insulting one.

[127] W.B. 'likewise also a bowl measure of the drink'.

[128] W.B. 'Peredur'.

self to him, before I am even wooed by him. That I cannot do at all.' 'By our confession to God,' said they,[1] 'if you will not do that, we will leave you to your enemies [to do what they will with you.'[1]]

And through fear thereof,[129] the maiden arose[130] and, W.B. 135
letting her tears flow, she came straight to the chamber. And through the noise of the door opening, Peredur woke up. There was the maiden, with tears running down her cheeks.[131] 'Tell me, my sister,' said Peredur, 'for what reason are you weeping?'[132] 'I will tell you, R.B. 207
lord,' said she. 'My father owned [this domain as his own property, and[1]] this court and the earldom under it, the best in the world.[133] Then the son of another Earl sought me of my father. I would not go to him of my own free will. My father would not give me against my will to him or to any earl in the world.[134] And my father had no children except myself. And after my father died, the dominion fell into my hand, and then I would have him less willingly than before. Thereupon he warred against me, and conquered the dominions, except this one house. And through the bravery of the men that you have seen, foster-brothers of mine, and the strength of the house, it could never be taken from me[2] so long as food and drink remained. And those have come to an end, save so far as the nuns you have seen have been supplying us with, by reason of

[129] W.B. 'thereupon'. [130] R.B. 'started'.
[131] R.B. 'crying and mourning'.
[132] W.B. 'why this weeping that is upon you?'
[133] R.B. 'dominion'.
[134] W.B. 'one'.

the dominion and country being free to them. And now they too have neither food nor drink. And it is no further off than to-morrow that the earl will come, and all his power with him,[1] against this place; and should he seize me, my fate will be no better than to be given to the grooms of his horses. And I am come to offer myself to you, lord, in the way that is most[1] pleasing to you, so that you may be strength unto us by taking us away from here or in defending us here.' 'Go, sister
W.B. 136 of mine,' said he, 'to sleep; and I will not go from you [before I do something of that which you speak of, until I have learnt that I can be of strength unto you.'][135]

The maiden came back, and went[2] to sleep. Next day, in the morning, the maiden arose, and came to the place[1] where Peredur was, and greeted him. 'God prosper you, my soul, and what sort of[1] news have you?' 'There is nought but good, lord, so long as you are well, except that[114] the earl and his whole power have alighted at the gate.[136] And no one has seen a place
R.B. 208 more full with tents or with knights calling on another to joust.' 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'get ready my horse for me, and I will arise.'[2]

Then was the horse made ready for Peredur;[86] and he arose and went to the meadow. And when he came,[2] a knight was there[1] riding his horse[2] arrogantly in the meadow,[1] having raised a standard of battle. And there they tilted; and[1] Peredur bore the knight[86] to the ground over his horse's crupper. [And that day he overthrew many. And during nones,][2] towards the end

[135] W.B. 'without one of those'. [136] W.B. 'house'.

of the day, the chief knight came to tilt with him; and Peredur[14] overthrew him. He sought quarter. 'Who are you?' said Peredur. 'Of a truth,' said he, 'I am the Earl's *penteulu*.'[137] 'What of the Countess' dominions is there in your power?' 'Of a truth,' said he, 'one-third.' 'Yea,' said he, 'restore to her the third of her dominions in full, and what goods you have had therefrom in full;[2] and food for a hundred men, and drink, and horses, and arms for them to-night in the court. And you a prisoner to her; otherwise your life shall not be spared.' That she got forthwith; and that night the maiden was full of joy. A third of her dominion in her possession, and an equivalent of horses and arms, and food and drink in the court. They took as W.B. 137
much ease as they thought good, and they went to sleep.[138]

And next day, in the morning,[2] Peredur repaired to the meadow, and that day he overthrew a multitude of them.[1] And at the end of that day, a famous[139] principal knight came, and Peredur[14] overthrew him, and he sought quarter of Peredur.[1] 'What one are you?' said Peredur. 'The steward of the court,'[1] said he. 'What', said Peredur,[1] 'is there in your possession[140] of the maid's dominions?' 'One third of the dominion,'[1] said he. 'Yes,' said Peredur,[1] 'one third of [2] the maiden's dominions, and whatever goods you have had therefrom in full, and food for two hundred men, and drink, and

[137] 'penteulu' = commander of the bodyguard.
[138] R.B. 'having received all of that'.
[139] R.B. 'arrogant'. [140] W.B. 'hand'.

horses, and arms for them, and yourself a prisoner to her.' And that she got forthwith.

On the third day Peredur came to the meadow, and he overthrew more that day than any other[2] day. And
R.B. 209 at the end of the day,[1] the[141] Earl came to tilt with him, and he threw him to the ground,[2] and the Earl[21] sought quarter. 'Who are you?' said Peredur. 'I am the Earl,' said he, 'I will not conceal myself.' 'Yea,' said Peredur,[14] 'the whole of[2] her earldom in full[1] to the maid, and your own earldom in addition also, and food for three hundred men, and drink, and horses, and arms for them, and yourself in her power.' And so it was in full.[1]

And Peredur tarried[142] three weeks, causing tribute and the restoration of her property to be made to the maiden,[143] [according to her counsel].[1] [And after her dominion had been settled and established,][2] 'With your permission,' said Peredur, 'I will depart hence.'
W.B. 138 'Do you wish that, my brother?' 'Yes, by my faith, and had I not loved you, I should not have been here so long as I have been.'[144] 'My soul,' said she, 'who are you?' 'Peredur, the son of Efrawc of the North, and should there come upon you either onset or danger, acquaint me, and I will defend you, if I can.'

From there Peredur departed; and at a distance thence, a lady riding came and[2] met him, and under her a scraggy, foaming horse. And she greeted the

[141] R.B. 'an'. [142] W.B. 'was thus'.
[143] R.B. 'and her dominion'.
[144] W.B. 'since a long time', i.e. I should have left long ago.

knight.[145] 'Whence[146] come you, my sister?' said Peredur.[2] She told him the purpose[147] there was for that journey. She was the wife of the Proud Man of the Clearing. 'Yea,' said Peredur,[21] 'I am the knight through whom you did get that sorrow, and whoever did thus to you[2] shall be sorry.' Thereupon, behold, a knight came, and asked Peredur if he had seen a knight like him he was seeking.[148] 'Stop your noise,' said Peredur, 'it is I whom you are seeking. And by my faith, [evil are you and your bodyguard to][1] the maiden, [for she][1] is innocent of me.' Nevertheless they tilted, and they had not tilted long ere[1] Peredur overthrew the knight, and[1] he sought quarter of Peredur.[1] 'Quarter shall you have,' said Peredur,[1] 'by going back the way R.B. 210
you have come to declare that you found the maid innocent, and that, as atonement to her, you have been overthrown by me.' The knight gave his faith thereto.

And thereupon Peredur journeyed on, and on a hill near him he saw a castle, and he came towards the castle,[101] and struck the gate with his lance. Thereupon, behold, a handsome auburn-haired youth, with the stature and girth[2] of a warrior, and the age of a boy upon him, opened the gate. And when Peredur came to the hall, there was a tall handsome woman sitting in W.B. 139
a chair, and handmaidens round about her, and the lady was joyful at seeing him.

And when it was time for them[1] to go to eat,[2] they

145 R.B. 'macwy'. 146 R.B. 'from what place'.
147 R.B. 'cause'.
148 W.B. 'such a knight as he was after'.

went to eat. After finishing[1] eating, 'It would be well for you, sir,' said the woman,[149] 'to go elsewhere to sleep.' 'Why may I not sleep here?' said Peredur.[2] 'Nine witches, my soul,' said she,[1] 'are here of the witches of Gloucester,[1] and their father and mother with them,[150] and our escape ere day is not nearer than our being slain by them.[1] And now they have finished overrunning the dominion and laying it waste, save this one house.' 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'here will I remain to-night, and if affliction should come to you,[1] I will aid you if I can. Harm will I not do.' And they went to sleep.

And along with the day, Peredur heard a terrible cry of distress. And Peredur arose quickly in his shirt and breeches, with his sword on his neck. And he came outside. When he came,[2] he beheld[151] a witch overtaking a watchman, who was uttering a cry of distress. Peredur rushed at the witch, and struck her with his sword on the head, until he flattened out her helm and headpiece like a dish on her head. 'Your quarter, fair Peredur, son of Efrawc, and the quarter of God.' 'How, hag, did you know that I am Peredur?' 'A destiny and a vision that we suffer affliction from you, and yourself taking a horse and arms from me, and you tarrying with me awhile,[2] and learning how to ride
R.B. 211
W.B. 140 your horse[2] and to feel your arms.' 'Thus', said Peredur,[14] 'shall you have quarter. Your faith that you

[149] R.B. 'she'.
[150] W.B. inserts 'They are the witches of Gloucester'.
[151] W.B. 'there was'.

will never do evil to the Countess' dominions.' And Peredur took a pledge therefor, and, with the permission of the Countess, he set out along with the witch to the court of the witches. And he was there continuously for three weeks, and then he chose his horse, and Peredur took[2] his arms, and set forth away.[2]

And at the end of the day[2] one evening[1] he came to a valley, and at the end of the valley, he came to the cell of a hermit; and the hermit was joyful at seeing him. And there he remained that night, and next day, in the morning, he arose from there.[1] And when he came outside, there was a fall of snow, which had fallen the night before, and a wild hawk had slain a wild[2] duck in front of the cell. And with the noise of the horse, the hawk flew away,[152] and a raven descended on the flesh of the bird. Thereupon, Peredur stood and likened the blackness of the raven, and the whiteness of the snow, and the redness of the blood to the hair of the woman he loved best, which was as black as jet, and her skin was of the whiteness of [153] snow, and the blood on the white[2] snow were the two red spots upon the[154] cheeks of the woman he loved best.[2]

Meanwhile, Arthur and his bodyguard were seeking Peredur. 'Do you know', said Arthur, 'who the knight with the long[1] spear is, who is standing in the dingle higher up?' 'Lord,' said one, 'I will go to find out who he is.' Then the *macwy* came to the place[1] where Peredur was, and asked him what he was doing there,[2] W.B. 141

[152] W.B. 'got up'. [153] R.B. 'as white as the . . .'
[154] R.B. 'her'.

and who he was. And through the greatness of Peredur's thought of the woman he loved best, he gave no answer to him. Then he struck Peredur with his lance, and Peredur overthrew the *macwy*, and knocked him[2] to the ground over his horse's crupper. Then one after the other four-and-twenty *macwyaid*[155] came to him,[1]
R.B. 212 and he gave no answer to one more than the other, only the same play with every one, a blow with one tilt over the horse[2] to the ground. Then Cai came to him, and spoke roughly and angrily to Peredur. And Peredur took him under the jaw with his lance, and hurled him a great cast[2] from him, until he broke his arm and shoulder-blade [and rode over him one-and-twenty times].[1] And while he lay senseless by reason of the greatness of the pain he had suffered, his horse returned at a wild[1] plunging canter. And when all of[2] the body-guard saw the horse coming without the man upon it, they came[33] in haste towards the place where the adventure had happened. And when they came there, they thought that Cai was slain; yet they saw that [if he got a doctor, the bone would reunite and the joint bind itself properly, and that he would be none the worse].[156] Peredur moved not from[2] his thought more than before to see the crest that was[1] on Cai's head. And they came with Cai as far as Arthur's tent; and Arthur caused skilful doctors to be brought to him. And Arthur felt it ill that Cai had met with that sorrow, for he loved him greatly.

[155] W.B. ' knights '.

[156] R.B. ' he would live, if he obtained a good doctor '.

And thereupon Gwalchmai said, 'It was not right for any one to disturb unreasonably an honourable knight from the thought that was upon him; for, per- W.B. 142
haps, some loss has happened to him, or he was thinking of the woman he loved best. And through such unseemliness, perhaps, this has happened to the man who met him last. And if it seems good to you, lord, I myself will go to see if the knight has moved from that thought; and, if it be so, I will ask him courteously to come to visit you.' And then Cai sulked, and spoke angry, spiteful words. 'Gwalchmai,' said he, 'it is clear to me you will come with him, leading him by the reins. Nevertheless, small fame and honour is there to you through conquering a weary knight, tired with battle. Yet thus have you vanquished many a one; and R.B. 213
so long as your tongue and fair words last you, you will have a sufficiency of arms. A coat of fine linen on you, and you will have no need to break either lance or sword in fighting with the knight you shall find in that condition.' And then Gwalchmai said to Cai, 'If you wished it, you could speak more courteously; and not upon me does it belong to you to avenge your wrath and anger. I think, nevertheless, that I shall bring the knight with me, without breaking either my arm or shoulder.' Then said Arthur to Gwalchmai, 'Like a wise and rational man you speak. Go straightway, and take sufficient arms with you, and choose your horse.'

Gwalchmai attired himself, and went forth nimbly W.B. 143
at a horse's pace to the place where Peredur was. And

the latter was resting on the shaft of his lance, and thinking the same thought. Gwalchmai came to him, without any sign of hot blood upon him, and said to him, 'If I knew that it would seem good to you, as it seems good to me, I would talk with you. Nevertheless, a messenger am I to you from Arthur, to beg you to come and meet him. And two men came before me with that same[2] message.' 'That is true,' said Peredur, 'and discourteously came they. They fought with me, and that did not seem good to me, since it seemed not well to me to be dragged from the thought I was upon. I was thinking of the woman I love most. This is the cause remembrance of her came to me. I was looking at the snow and at the raven, and at the drops of blood of the wild duck, which the hawk had slain in the snow.

R.B. 214 And I thought that her whiteness was like to the snow, and the blackness of her hair and eyebrows to the raven, and the two red spots that were upon her cheeks to the two drops of blood.' Said Gwalchmai, 'That thought was not unseemly, and it is not strange that it seemed not good to you to be drawn from it.' Said Peredur, 'Will you tell me is Cai in Arthur's court?' 'He is,' said he; 'he was the last knight who tilted with you, and it was

W.B. 144 not good that came to him in the joust. His right arm is broken for him,[1] and his shoulder-blade, through the fall he got from the thrust of your spear.' 'Yes,' said Peredur, 'I am not concerned at having begun to revenge so the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.' Then Gwalchmai marvelled at hearing him speak of the dwarf and dwarfess; and he came near him, and put

his two hands on his neck, and asked what his name was. 'Peredur, son of Efrawc, am I called,' said he; 'and you, who are you?' 'Gwalchmai am I called,' said he. 'I am glad to see you,' said Peredur. 'Your fame is heard in every land I have been in for[157] prowess and uprightness; and I beg that I may have[158] your friendship.' 'You shall have it, by my faith, and do you give me yours.' 'You shall have it joyfully,' said Peredur.

They set out happily together towards the place where Arthur was. And when Cai heard that they were coming, he said, 'I knew that Gwalchmai[159] would need not to fight the knight; and it is passing strange that he acquires fame. He does more by fair words than we do by strength and arms.' And Peredur went with Gwalchmai to Gwalchmai's tent to take off their arms; and Peredur took the same kind of garment as Gwalchmai had, and they went, hand in hand, to the place[1] where Arthur was, and saluted him. 'Behold, lord,' said Gwalchmai, 'the man whom for ever so long a time you R.B. 215
have been seeking.' 'Welcome to you, sir,' said Arthur. 'Abide with me, and had I known that your prowess was such as it has been, you should not have gone from me when you did go. This, nevertheless, the dwarf and W.B. 145
dwarfess, to whom Cai did ill, foretold of you, and you have avenged them.' And thereupon, behold[1] the Queen and her handmaidens came; and Peredur saluted them; and they were glad to see him, and wel-

157 W.B. 'by reason of your . . .'
158 W.B. 'for'.
159 R.B. text has 'Cai' by error.

comed him. Reverence and great honour did Arthur do to Peredur, and they returned towards Caerlleon.

On the first night Peredur came to Caerlleon to Arthur's court, it happened that[2] he was walking in the city, after eating. Behold Angharad of the Golden Hand met him. 'By my faith, sister mine,' said Peredur, 'a lovely, loving maid are you; and if it be good to you, I could love you above all women.' 'I pledge you my faith thus,' said she, 'I shall love you not, and I shall want you not to eternity.' 'And I,' said Peredur, 'I pledge my faith that I shall never speak a word to a Christian, until you confess that you love me most of all men.'

The next day Peredur travelled away. He followed the high road along the back of a high mountain; and at the end of the mountain he saw a round-shaped valley,[160] and the borders of the valley were wooded and rocky, and the level part of the valley consisted of meadows, and there were tilled fields between the meadows and the wood. And in the heart of the wood he saw large black houses, clumsily constructed. And he dismounted, and led his horse towards the wood, and a little way in the wood he saw the edge of a sharp rock,
W.B. 146 with a road passing by the side of the rock, and a lion, bound with a chain, asleep by the side of the rock. And he saw a deep pit, of huge size, below the lion, and it
R.B. 216 was full of bones of men and animals. And Peredur drew his sword, and struck the lion, until it fell, hanging by the chain, over the mouth of the pit. And a second

[160] 'Dyffryn Crwnn'.

blow he struck the chain until it broke, so that the lion fell into the pit.

And Peredur led his horse across the side of the rock until he came to the valley. And in the middle of the valley he saw a fair castle, and he came towards the castle, and in the meadow by the castle he saw a big grey-headed man sitting; he was bigger than any man he had ever seen. And two young boys were hurling the walrus-tusk hafts of their knives. One of them was an auburn-haired youth, and the other a yellow-haired youth. And he came straight to the place[1] where the grey-haired man was, and Peredur saluted him. And the grey-haired man said, ' Shame on my gate-keeper's beard.' And thereupon, Peredur understood that the lion was the keeper of the gate.

Thereupon the grey-haired man, and the youths with him, went to the castle, and Peredur went with them. And a fair and wondrous place he saw there. And they proceeded to the hall, and the tables had been made ready, and food and drink without stint upon them. And then he saw coming from the chamber an old woman and a young woman, and they were the biggest women he had ever seen. And they washed and went to eat, and the grey-haired man went to the head of the table in the highest place, with the old woman next to W.B. 147
him. And Peredur and the maiden were placed together, and the two young boys waited on them. And the maiden looked at Peredur, and was sad. And Peredur asked the maiden why she was sad. ' For you, my soul. From when I saw you first, I loved you most of

men, and sore am I to see a youth so well-descended as you, with the fate that will be yours to-morrow. Did
R.B. 217 you see the many black houses on the breast of the wood? Men are all those to my father, yonder grey-haired man, and they are giants all. To-morrow they will rise up against you and slay you. And Dyffryn Crwnn (the round valley) is this valley called.' 'Well, fair maiden, will you arrange that my horse and my arms shall be in the same lodging as myself to-night?' 'I will gladly arrange it, if I can, between me and God.' When it was more timely for them to get slumber than to carouse, they went to sleep. And the maiden arranged that Peredur's horse and his arms should be in the same lodging as himself.

And next day Peredur heard a bustling of men and horses around the castle. And Peredur arose, and equipped himself and his horse with arms; and he came to the meadow, and the old woman and the maiden came to the grey-haired man. 'Lord,' said they, 'take the *macwy's* faith, that he will tell nothing of what he has seen here, and we will stand for him that he will keep it.' 'I will not take it, by my faith,' said the grey-haired man. And Peredur fought with the host, and
W.B. 148 by evening he had slain one third of the host without any one injuring him. And then said the old woman, 'Now, the *macwy* has slain many of your host, will you grant him quarter?' 'I will not grant it, by my faith,' said he. And the old woman and the fair maiden were watching from an opening in the battlements.

And thereupon, Peredur encountered the yellow-

haired youth and slew him. 'Lord,' said the maiden, 'grant quarter to the *macwy*.' 'I will not grant it, between me and God,' said the grey-haired man.[1]

And then Peredur encountered the auburn-haired youth and slew him. 'It would have been better for you, had you granted quarter to the *macwy* before he had slain your two sons, and hard will it be for you yourself to escape him.' 'Go yourself, maiden, and beg the *macwy* to grant us quarter, since we have not granted it to him.'

And the maiden came to the place[1] where Peredur R.B. 218
was, and sought quarter for her father, and for the number of his men who had escaped alive. 'You shall have it on condition that your father, and all who are under him, go to do homage to the Emperor Arthur, and tell him that it was Peredur, his man, who did this service.' 'We will do so, willingly, between me and God.' 'And for you to receive baptism. And I myself will send to Arthur, to beg of him to give this valley to you and to your issue for ever after you.'

And thereupon they came in; and the grey-haired man and the big woman saluted Peredur. And then the grey-haired man said, 'Ever since I have owned this valley, I have not seen a Christian who has gone with W.B. 149
his life with him except you. And we will go to do homage to Arthur, and to receive the faith and baptism.' And thereupon Peredur said, 'I thank God that I have not broken my oath to the woman I love most, that I would not speak one word to a Christian.' They stayed there that night.

Next day, in the morning, the grey-haired man, and his host with him, went to Arthur's court, and did homage to Arthur, and Arthur caused them to be baptized. And the grey-haired man said to Arthur that it was Peredur who had vanquished them. And Arthur gave to the grey-haired man and his host the valley to hold it under him, as Peredur had sought. And with Arthur's permission, the grey-haired man went forth towards Dyffryn Crwnn.

Next day, in the morning, Peredur himself journeyed onwards through a large tract of desert, without finding a habitation, and at length he came to a small wretched dwelling. And there he heard that there was a serpent lying on a gold ring, without allowing a habitation within seven miles on every side of him. And Peredur went to the place where he heard the serpent was, and he fought with the serpent, wrathfully and fiercely-
R.B. 219 proudly; and at length he slew it, and took the ring himself.

And thus he was for a long time in that miserable travelling, without saying one word to any kind of Christian; and for that reason he lost his colour and looks, through longing for Arthur's court and the
W.B. 150 woman he loved best and his companions.

Thence he travelled straight to Arthur's court, and on the road Arthur's bodyguard met him, with Cai in front of them, going on an errand. Peredur recognized all of them, but none of the bodyguard recognized him. 'Whence come you, sir?' said Cai, and a second time, and a third. And he answered not. Cai struck

him with a lance through the thigh; and lest he should be forced to speak, and break his faith, he passed by without avenging himself on him.

And then Gwalchmai said, 'Between me and God, Cai, you have done ill outraging a *macwy* like this because he cannot speak.' And he turned back to Arthur's court. 'Lady,' said he to Gwenhwyfar, 'see you how evilly Cai has outraged this *macwy*, because he cannot speak. For God's sake and for me, arrange that he shall be doctored by when I[161] return, and I will pay you the cost.'

And before the men came from their quest, a knight came to the meadow near Arthur's court to seek a man to tilt with. And that he got. Peredur[14] overthrew him, and for a week he overthrew a knight daily.

And one day Arthur and his bodyguard were coming to church. They saw a knight, who had uplifted his standard for combat. 'Ah, men,' said Arthur, 'by the valour of men, I will not go hence until I get my horse and arms to overthrow yonder churl.' Thereupon the servants went for his horse and arms for Arthur. And W.B. 151
Peredur met the servants going by, and he took the R.B. 220
horse and the arms and proceeded to the meadow.

Thereupon all they who saw him arise and go to tilt with the knight went to the house-tops and hills and high places to watch the combat. Peredur signalled with his hand to the knight to pray him to begin. And the knight thrust at him, but he budged not from the place for that. And then Peredur spurred his horse,[2]

[161] W.B. 'ere my'.

and attacked him wrathfully, furiously, bitterly, and with fierce pride, and struck him a keen and deadly blow, violent and soldierly-firm, beneath the jaw, and unseated him from his saddle, and hurled him a long distance from him. And he returned and left his horse and arms with the servants as before. Thereupon he repaired on foot[162] to the court, and then was Peredur called the Dumb *Macwy*.

Then[1] behold Angharad of the Golden Hand met him. 'Between me and God, sir,' said she,[1] 'it is sad that you cannot speak. And were you able to speak, I should love you best of men. By my faith, though you cannot, I will love you best of men.'[1] 'God reward you, my sister,' said Peredur,[1] 'and by my faith, I will love you.' And thereupon it was known that he was Peredur, and then he obtained friendship with Gwalch-
W.B. 152 mai and with Owein, son of Uryen, and with all of the bodyguard that tarried in Arthur's court.

Arthur was in Caerlleon on Usk. And he went to hunt, and Peredur with him. And Peredur unleashed his dog upon a stag, and the dog slew the stag in a desert place. And at the end of an onset from him, he saw signs of a dwelling, and he came towards the dwelling, and he saw a hall. And at the door of the hall, he saw three bald-headed savage-looking servants playing at
R.B. 221 chess. And when he came inside he saw three maidens sitting on a couch, and the same kind of clothes[163] upon them as was suitable on noble people. And he came to sit by them on the couch, and one of the maidens

[162] R.B. 'his feet'. [163] W.B. 'golden apparel'.

looked steadfastly at Peredur, and wept. And Peredur asked her why she wept. 'Through the sorrow that is on me, seeing the slaying of a youth so fair as you.' 'Who would slay me?' said Peredur.[1] 'Were it not that it would delay you to stay in this place, I would tell you.' 'However great the opposition might be to me staying, I would listen to it.' 'The man who is father to me', said the maiden,[1] 'owns this court, and he slays all who come to this court without his permission.' 'What kind of man is your father, that he can so slay every one?' 'A man who does violence and evil upon his neighbours, and who does right therefor to none.'

And then he saw the servants arise and clear the board of the pieces. And he heard a great tumult. And after the tumult he saw a big one-eyed black man coming inside, and the maidens arose to meet him, and W.B. 153 they took his garments from off him. And he went to sit down. And when his reason came to him and he had rested, he looked at Peredur, and asked, 'Who is the knight?' 'Lord,' said one of the maidens,[26] 'the fairest and best-bred young[1] man you did ever see, and for God and your wisdom, be considerate towards him.' 'For your sake, I will be considerate, and will grant him his life to-night.'

And then Peredur came to them by the fire, and took food and drink, and spoke with the ladies. And thereupon Peredur, being intoxicated, said to the black man,[1] 'Strange to me is the strength you say you have. Who deprived you of your eye?' 'It is one of my customs, said the black man,[1] 'that whosoever may ask me that R.B. 222

which you are asking, shall not keep his life from me, neither freely nor for value.' 'Lord,' said the maiden, 'though he speak to you foolishly, through intoxication and drunkenness, keep the word which you spoke a while ago and promised me.' 'That will I do gladly for your sake,' said the black man,[1] 'I will spare his life gladly to-night.' And thereupon they passed that night.

On the morrow the black man arose, and put on his arms, and he commanded Peredur, 'Rise, man,' said the black man, 'to suffer death.' Peredur said to him,[164] 'Do one thing,[165] black man: if you wish to fight with
W.B. 154 me, either disarm yourself, or give me yourself other arms to fight with you.' 'Ah, man,' said he, 'can you fight if you obtain arms? Take the arms you want.' And thereupon the maiden came with arms to Peredur, which were desirable to him. And he fought with the black man, until the black man was forced to seek quarter of Peredur. 'Black man, you shall have quarter, if you tell me who you are, and who pulled out your eye.' 'Lord, I will tell you. In fighting with the Black Dragon[166] of the Carn. There is a barrow, which is called the Barrow of Grief. And in the barrow there is a carn, and in the carn there is a dragon, and in the tail of the dragon there is a stone, and the virtues of the stone are that whosoever shall take it in the one hand, shall have in his other hand as much gold as he desires.

164 W.B. 'the black man'.

165 This idiom is of common occurrence in these stories = 'Do one thing or the other'.

166 'Pryf'. The ordinary Welsh word for 'dragon' is 'Draig'. 'Pryf' = reptile, vermin, insect, anything creeping and loathsome.

And in fighting with that dragon did I lose my eye. And my name is *Du Trahawc*.[167] This is the reason I was called *Du Trahawc*; I would not leave one man near me whom I would not oppress, and right would I do to none.' 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'how far from here is the barrow of which you speak.' 'I will number for you the journeys as far as it, and will tell you how far it is. R.B. 223 The day you set out from here, you will come to the court of the Sons of the King of Suffering.' 'Why are they so called?' 'The *Addanc*[168] of the Lake slays them once daily. When you depart thence, you will come to the court of the Countess of Exploits.' 'What exploits', said Peredur,[1] 'are hers?' 'Three hundred men form her bodyguard. Every stranger who comes to her court is told the exploits of her bodyguard. This is the W.B. 155 reason thereof. The three hundred men of the bodyguard sit next to the lady, not out of dishonour to the guests, but to tell the exploits of the bodyguard. The day[169] you set out thence you will go to[170] the Barrow of Grief, and there are the owners of three hundred tents around the Barrow, guarding the dragon.' 'Since you have been', said Peredur,[1] 'an oppression so long as that, I will so do that you shall not be so ever again.' And Peredur slew him, and then the maid, who had begun to converse with him, said to him, 'If, coming here, you were poor, henceforth rich will you be from the treasure of the black man you have slain. You see

[167] 'the Black Arrogant One'.
[168] 'Addanc': a mythical monster, who dwelt in deep waters.
[169] W.B. 'night'. [170] W.B. 'as far as'.

the multitude of beautiful maids who are in this court. You may have as mistress the one of them[1] you desire.' 'I came not here[1] from my land, lady, to take any woman; but do ye, all of you, attach yourselves, as you will, to the handsome youths I see here. And none of your goods do I want, and I have no need of them.'

Peredur set out thence straightway, and he came to the court of the Sons of the King of Suffering. And when he came to the court he saw none save women, and the women arose before him, and were pleasant to him. And, at the beginning of their conversation, he saw a horse coming, with a saddle on it, and a corpse in the saddle, and one of the women rose up, and took the
R.B. 224 corpse off the saddle, and bathed it in a tub,[171] which
W.B. 156 was below the door with warm water in it, and put precious ointment on it. And the man arose alive, and came to the place[1] where Peredur was, and greeted him, and he was joyful towards him. And two other men came in in their saddles, and the maiden healed those two like the first one. Then Peredur asked the chieftain why they were thus, and they said that there was an *Addanc* in a cave, and that it slew them once[1] daily.

And on that they spent that night. And next day the *macwyaid* arose, and Peredur besought them, for the sake of their sweethearts, to allow him to go with them. And they refused and said,[1] 'Should you be slain there, you have no one who would bring you back to life.'

And thereupon they journeyed onwards, and Peredur

[171] R.B. text has a lacuna here.

followed after them. And after they had vanished, so that he could not see them, he met, sitting on the top of a barrow, the fairest woman he had ever seen. 'I know your journey,' said she,[1] 'you are going to fight the *Addanc*, and he will slay you, and that not by bravery, but by stratagem. He has a cave, and there is a pillar of stone at the entrance of the cave, and he sees everybody who comes inside, and nobody sees him. And from the shade of the pillar he slays all with a poisoned stone-spear. And if you would give me your faith to love me most of women, I would give you a stone whereby you shall see him when you go inside, and he will not see you.' 'I will give it, by my faith,' said Peredur; 'from when I first saw you, I have loved W.B. 157
you; and where shall I seek you?' 'When you seek me, seek towards India.' And then the maiden vanished away, after giving the stone into Peredur's hand.

And he came straight to a river valley. And the R.B. 225
borders of the valley were wood, and on both sides of the river flat meadows. And on one side of the river he saw a flock of white sheep, and on the other side he saw a flock of black sheep. And as one of the white sheep would bleat, one of the black sheep would come through and become white. And as one of the black sheep would bleat, one of the white sheep would come through and become black. And he beheld a tall tree by the river bank, and one half of it was burning from the roots up to the top, and the other half had green leaves upon it.[172]

[172] This apparently fanciful picture is literally true. It can be

And farther on from that he saw a *macwy* sitting on the top of a mound with two greyhounds, white-breasted and brindled, in leashes, lying near him. And he was certain that he had never seen a *macwy* so kingly as he. And in the wood facing him, he heard staghounds raising a deer. And he saluted the *macwy*, and the *macwy* saluted Peredur. And Peredur saw three roads going from the mound. Two roads were wide, and the third narrower, and Peredur asked where the three roads went to. 'One of these roads goes to my court,
W.B. 158 and one of two things I advise you: either to go to the court in front to my wife, who is there, or to stay here yourself; and you shall see the staghounds driving the tired deer out of the wood to the open land. And you shall see the best greyhounds you ever saw and the keenest in slaying the deer by the water near by us. And when it is time for us to go to food, my servant will bring my horse to meet me, and you shall have happiness there to-night.' 'God thank[173] you, I will not tarry, but I must go onwards.' 'The other[174] road goes
R.B. 226 to the town, which is near by. And there food and drink can be got for a price. And the road which is narrower than the others goes to the *Addanc's* cave.' 'With your permission, *macwy*, I will go in that direction.'

And Peredur went towards the cave, and took the

seen frequently in Merioneth in the autumn, when the leaves are dying; the western half of a beech-tree turning to a flaming red, owing to the violence of the winds blowing in from the sea, while the eastern side remains vividly green.

[173] W.B. 'reward'. [174] W.B. 'second'.

stone in his left hand, and his spear in his right hand. And as he came in he perceived the *Addanc*, and thrust him through with the spear, and cut off his head.

And when he came out of the cave to the open land, behold the three companions at the entrance of the cave. And they saluted Peredur, and said that there was a prediction that he would slay that oppression. And Peredur gave the head to the *macwyaid*, and they offered him the one of their three sisters he desired[175] in marriage,[105] and half their kingdom with her. 'I came not here to find a wife,' said Peredur,[1] 'and if I wished for a wife, perhaps I should desire your sister most.'

And Peredur journeyed on, and he heard a tumult W.B. 159
behind; and he looked backwards, and he saw a man on the back of a red horse, and red arms upon him, and the man came opposite to him. And he saluted Peredur in the name of God and man. And Peredur also saluted the *macwy* kindly. 'Lord, I am come to make a request to you.' 'What do you seek?' said Peredur. 'To be taken as a man to you.' 'Whom would I be taking as a man, were I to take you?' 'I will not conceal my kindred from you. Etlym of the Red Sword am I called, an Earl from the quarter of the East.' 'I marvel that you offer to be a man to one who has a dominion no greater than you; for I myself have naught but another earldom. And since it pleases you to come as a man to me, I will take you gladly.'

And they came towards the court of the Countess, and joy was there in the court at their coming. And R.B. 227

[175] W.B. 'might choose'.

they told them that not through disrespect to them were they placed below the bodyguard, but because the custom of the court was such, for whoever should overthrow the three hundred men of her bodyguard would obtain (the right to) eat next to her, and she would love him most of men.

And after Peredur had thrown the three hundred men of the bodyguard to the ground, and sat beside her, the Countess said, 'I thank God I have found a servant
W.B. 160 so fair and so brave as you, since I have not found the man I love most.' 'Who is the man you love most?' 'By my faith, Etlym of the Red Sword is the man I love most, and I have never seen him.' 'Of a truth,' said he, 'Etlym is a companion of mine; and here he is. And for his sake came I to play with your bodyguard. And had he wished, he could have done better than myself, and I will give you to him.' 'God thank you, fair *macwy*, and I will take the man I love most.' And that night Etlym and the Countess slept together.

And next day Peredur set out for the Barrow of Grief. 'By thy hand, lord, I will go along with you,' said Etlym. They came straightway to the place where they saw the barrow and the tents. 'Go', said Peredur to Etlym, 'to yonder men, and demand that they come to do homage to me.' Etlym came to them, and spoke to them thus. 'Come and do homage to my lord.' 'Who is your lord?' said they. 'Peredur of the Long Spear is my lord,' said Etlym. 'Were it right to destroy a messenger, you should not return alive to your lord, for making so arrogant a demand to kings and

earls and barons, (as) to come to do homage to your lord.'

Etlym came back to Peredur.[2] Peredur directed him to go back again to them, and to give them the choice, either to do homage to him or to tilt with him. They chose to tilt with him; and Peredur overthrew to the ground the owners of a hundred tents that day. And next day he overthrew to the ground the owners of a hundred others, and the third day[1] a hundred decided to do homage to Peredur. And Peredur asked them what they were doing there, and they told him that they were guarding the Dragon until it should die, and 'then we would fight ourselves for the stone, and the one of us who shall be the mightiest shall get the stone.' 'Await me here,' said Peredur, 'I will go to meet the Dragon.' 'Not so, lord,' said they, 'we will go together to fight the dragon.' 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'I will not permit that. Should the dragon be slain, I should get no more fame than any one of you.' R.B. 228 W.B. 161

And he went to the place where the Dragon was and slew him, and came to them, and said to them,[1] 'Count up your expenses since you came here, and I will pay you in gold,' said Peredur. He paid them as much as they all said was due therefor; and he sought nothing of them save that they should acknowledge themselves to be men to him. And he said to Etlym, 'You will go to the woman you love most, and I will go forward, and will reward you for coming as a man to me.' And then he gave the stone to Etlym. 'God reward you, and make your way easy before you.'

And Peredur went away; and he came to the fairest river valley he had ever seen, and he saw there many tents of varied colours. And he marvelled more than that to see as many as he saw of water-mills and wind-mills. And there came to meet him a tall auburn-haired man, with the appearance of a carpenter on him. And Peredur asked him who he was. 'I am the head miller', said he,[1] 'of all yonder mills.' 'Can I get a
R.B. 229 W.B. 162 lodging of you?' said Peredur. 'You can, willingly,' said he.

Peredur[14] came to the miller's house, and he saw a pleasant fair lodging of the miller's. And Peredur sought money of the miller, as a loan to buy food and drink for himself and the family of the house, which he would repay before going thence. He asked the miller what was the cause of that mustering there.[1] The miller told Peredur. 'There is one thing: either you are a man from far off, or you are mad. The Empress of Christinobyl[176] the Great is here, and she wants naught but the bravest man, for she needs not goods. And food could not be brought for as many thousands as are here, and for that reason there are so many mills here.' And that night they took their[1] ease.

And next day Peredur arose, and equipped himself and his horse to go to the tournament. And he saw a tent in the midst of the other tents, the fairest he had ever seen. And a fair maiden saw he, putting her head through the tent window, and he had never seen a fairer maiden. And a golden[177] garment of brocaded silk

[176] 'Constantinople'. [177] W.B. 'jewelled'.

upon her. And he looked at the maiden steadfastly, and began to love her greatly. And thus he remained, gazing at the maiden from morning until midday, and from midday till it was the time of nones.

And then the tournament ended, and he came to the lodging, and took off his arms, and sought money from the miller as a loan. And the miller's wife was angry with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him money on loan. And next day he acted in the same way as he had done the day before, and that night he came to his W.B. 163
lodging and took money on loan from the miller.

And the third day, as he was in the same place, gazing R.B. 230
at the maiden, he felt a great blow between his shoulder and neck from the handle of an axe. And when he looked back at the miller, the miller said to him, 'Do one thing,' said the miller: 'either turn your head away, or go to the tournament.' And Peredur smiled at the miller and went to the tournament, and all who encountered him that day he bore to the ground, and as many men as he overthrew he sent as a present to the Empress, and the horses and the arms as a present to the miller's wife in payment for the money of the loan. And Peredur pursued the tournament until he had overthrown to the ground everybody, and he sent the men[178] to the prison of the Empress, and the horses and arms to the miller's wife in satisfaction for the money of the loan.

The Empress sent to the knight of the mill to ask him to come and visit her. And Peredur[14] refused her

[178] W.B. 'and those men he overthrew he sent . . .'

first message, and a second went to him. And she, the third time, sent a hundred knights to order him to come to visit her, and if he would not come of his own free will, with orders to them to bring him against his will. And they came to him, and told him their message from the Empress. He played with them well,
W.B. 164 and he caused them to be bound as a stag is bound[179] and to be thrown into the mill-dyke.

And the Empress asked advice of a wise man who was in her council, and the latter said to her, ' I will go to him, with your permission.' And he came to Peredur, and saluted him, and asked him, for the sake of his sweetheart, to come to visit the Empress, and he came, he and the miller. And in the first place he came to in
R.B. 231 the tent he sat down, and she came beside him, and they had a short conversation, and Peredur took leave, and went to his lodging.

The next day he went to visit her. And when he came to the tent, there was no one place in the tent that was less adorned than another, since they knew not where he would sit. Peredur sat down on one side of the Empress, and talked with her lovingly. While they were thus, they saw coming in a black man, with a golden goblet full of wine in his hand. And he fell on his knee in front of the Empress, and besought her not to give it except to one who would come to tilt

[179] i.e., hands and feet together, as the four legs of a stag, when killed, were bound for convenience of carrying. A full description appears in the *Bulletin of Celtic Studies*, vol. ii, Pt. II, p. 135, where an extract (made by Professor Ifor Williams) is reproduced from Peniarth MS. 27, ii. 26.

with him for it. And she looked at Peredur. 'Lady,' said he, 'give me the goblet'; and Peredur[14] drank the wine, and gave the goblet to the miller's wife.

And while they were thus, behold a black man, who was bigger than the other, with a dragon's claw in his hand, made into a goblet, which was full of wine. And he gave it to the Empress, and besought her not to give it save to one who would tilt with him. 'Lady,' said Peredur, 'give it to me.' And she gave it to Peredur, and Peredur drank the wine, and gave the goblet to the W.B. 165
miller's wife.

While they were thus, behold a curly red-headed man, who was bigger than any of the other men, with a goblet of crystal, full of wine, in his hand; and he bent down on his knee, and placed it in the Empress's hand, and besought her not to give it save to one who would tilt with him for it. And she gave it to Peredur, and he sent it to the miller's wife.

That night Peredur went to his lodging; and next day he equipped himself and his horse, and came to the meadow, and Peredur slew the three men. And then he came to the tent. And she said to Peredur,[1] 'Per- R.B. 232
edur fair, remember your faith which you gave me, when I gave you the stone, when you slew the *Addanc*.' 'Lady,' said he, 'you speak truth, and I will remember.' And Peredur ruled with the Empress for fourteen years, as the story tells.[180]

Arthur was at Caerlleon on Usk, his chief court, and

[180] 'As the story tells', points to the source of the story as perhaps a written one.

in the centre of the floor of the hall four men were sitting on a sheet of brocaded silk: Owein, the son of Uryen, and Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar, and Hywel, the son of Emyr Llydaw, and Peredur of the Long Spear.

And thereupon they saw coming in a curly black-haired maiden on the back of a yellow mule, with rough thongs in her hand, urging the mule on, with an unkempt and unlovely appearance on her. Blacker were her face and her two hands than the blackest iron
W.B. 166 steeped in pitch, and her colour was not the ugliest, but her shape. High cheeks had she,[1] and a face long and loose, and a short nose with wide nostrils. And one eye was of a very glittering dapple-grey, and the other as black as jet, sunk deep in her head. Long, yellow teeth, yellower than the flowers of broom; and her breast reached from the breastbone higher than her chin; her backbone was crooked; her two hips were broad and bony, and all below thin, save her feet and knees, which were bulky.[181] She saluted Arthur and all his bodyguard save Peredur, and to Peredur she spake angry and wrathful words. 'Peredur, I salute you not, for you deserve it not. Destiny was blind when she gave you favour and fame. When you came to the court of the lame king, and when you saw there the *macwy* carrying the sharp spear, and from the point of
R.B. 233 the spear a drop of blood, and that running like a torrent up to the *macwy's* fist, and other wonders which you also saw there, you asked not the meaning thereof,

[181] W.B. 'fat'.

nor their cause. Had you asked it, the King would have recovered health, and his dominions peace. And henceforth, combats and battles, and loss of knights. And the leaving of wives widowed, and maidens without provision, and all that because of you.' And then she said to Arthur, ' With your permission, lord, my lodging is far from here, none other than the Castle Syberw,[182] which I know not if you have heard of. And therein W.B. 167 there are five hundred and sixty-six honourable knights, and the woman each loves best with him. And whoever wishes to earn fame of arms and tilting and fighting, he will find it there, if he cares. Nevertheless, he who desires the supremacy in fame and honour, I know where he may get it. There is a castle on a prominent mountain, and therein there is a maiden, and it is being besieged. And whoever could relieve it would get the greatest fame in the world.' And thereupon she departed.

Said Gwalchmai, ' By my faith, I shall not sleep a gentle sleep till I know if I can release the maiden'; and many of Arthur's bodyguard agreed with him. But Peredur spoke otherwise. ' By my faith, I will not sleep a gentle sleep until I know the story and the meaning of the spear of which the black maiden spoke.'

And when all were equipping themselves, behold a knight came to the gate, with the size and strength of a warrior, furnished with clothes[183] and arms. And he came straight and saluted Arthur and his whole body-

[182] ' Syberw '. Professor Anwyl renders ' castle of esquires '.
[183] W.B. ' a horse '.

guard, except Gwalchmai. And on the knight's shoulder was a gold-chased shield, and a transom of
R.B. 234 blue enamel on it. And the same colour as it were all his other[1] arms. And he said to Gwalchmai, 'You slew my lord by your fraud and treachery, and that will I prove upon you.' Gwalchmai arose, 'Behold,' said he, 'my gage against you, either here or where you will, that I am neither a deceiver nor a traitor.' 'Before the
W.B. 168 king who is mine I will that the combat between you and me be,' said the knight.[1] 'Willingly,' said Gwalchmai; 'go forward, and I will follow you.' The knight went forth, and Gwalchmai equipped himself, and many arms were offered him; and he would have none but his own.

Gwalchmai and Peredur attired themselves and journeyed after him, because of their friendship, and because of their great love for each other. But they continued not together, but each in his own direction.

Gwalchmai came, in the youth of the day, to a valley, and in the valley he saw a fortress, and a great court in the fortress, and proud, lofty towers around it. And he saw a knight coming out of the gate to hunt on a jet-black palfrey, with large nostrils and swift-going. And it was high-spirited but docile, prancing yet sure-footed. He was the man who owned the court. Gwalchmai saluted him. 'God prosper you, sir. And whence come you?' 'I come', said he, 'from Arthur's court.' 'And are you a man to Arthur?' 'Yes, by my faith,' said Gwalchmai. 'I know good counsel for you,' said the knight. 'Tired and weary I see you are. Go to the

court and pass the night there, if it is good to you.' 'Good, lord, and God reward you.' 'Here is a ring as a sign to the porter, and go straight to yonder tower. My sister is there.'

And Gwalchmai came to the gate, and showed the ring, and proceeded to the tower. And when he came inside,[1] there was a great fire burning, and a high flame R.B. 235
of light from it without smoke. And a beautiful majestic maiden was sitting in a chair by the fire, and the maiden was joyful at seeing him, and greeted him, and came to W.B. 169
meet him. And he went to sit down on one side of the maiden. They ate their dinner, and after their dinner they turned to pleasant conversation. And while they were thus, behold coming inside to them a handsome, grey-haired man. 'Oh! you needy harlot,' said he, 'if you knew how it becomes you to play and sit along with that man, you would not sit nor play with him.' And he withdrew his head and away. 'Oh! sir,' said the maiden, 'if you will follow my advice, you will close that door, through fear that the man has a snare for you,' said she.[2]

Gwalchmai arose; and when he came to the door, the man, himself the sixtieth, fully armed, was mounting the tower. And Gwalchmai defended himself with a chess-board, lest any one of them[1] should come up until the man came from the hunt.

Thereupon, behold the Earl came. 'What is this?' said he. 'An ugly thing,' said the grey-haired man. 'Yonder harlot has been sitting till evening and eating[184] with the man who slew your father, and he is

[184] W.B. 'drinking'.

Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar.' 'Stop further,' said the Earl, 'I myself will go inside.' The Earl was glad to see Gwalchmai. 'Ah, sir,' said he, 'it was ill of you to come to our court, if you knew you had slain our father; since we can take no vengeance, God avenge him on you.' 'My soul,' said Gwalchmai, 'this is how it is regarding that. Neither to admit nor to deny that I slew your father came I. I am going on a quest for Arthur and for myself. I seek, therefore, the space of a year till I return from my quest; and then, by my faith,
W.B. 170 I will come to this court to do one of two things, to
R.B. 236 admit or to deny.' And he obtained the time willingly; and he remained there that night. The next day he set forth; and the story[180] says nothing more about Gwalchmai in that connexion.

And Peredur journeyed onwards. Peredur wandered through the island to seek news of the black maiden; and he obtained none. And he came to a territory he knew not in a river valley; and as he was walking through the valley, he saw a horseman coming to meet him, with the appearance of a priest on him; and he sought his blessing. 'Oh! wretched man,' said he, 'you deserve not to get a blessing, and it would not profit you, as you are wearing arms on a day so exalted as this day.' 'And what day is it to-day?' said Peredur. 'It is Good Friday to-day.' 'Reproach me not; I knew it not. A year from to-day I departed from my country'; and thereupon he dismounted, and led his horse with his hand.

And he travelled a short way along the high road,

until he came to a by-road. And (he took) the by-way through the wood, and on the other side of the wood, he saw a bare fortress, and he saw signs of habitation in the fortress. And he came towards the fortress; and at the gate of the fortress the priest, who had met him before, met him. And he sought his blessing. 'The blessing of God upon you,' said he. 'It is better to travel so. Abide with me to-night.' And Peredur stayed there that night.

Next day Peredur designed to go. 'To-day is not a day for any one to travel. Stay with me to-day and to-morrow, and the day after; and I will tell you the best W.B. 171
direction I can for that which you are seeking.' And the fourth day Peredur designed to go away, and begged the priest to tell him the direction to the Fort of Wonders. 'As much as I know, I will tell you. Go R.B. 237
across yonder mountain, and on the other side of the mountain there is a river. And in the river valley there is a king's court. And there the King was at Easter; and if you can get news in any place about the Fort of Wonders, you will get it there.'

And then Peredur[14] journeyed onwards, and he came to the valley of the river, and a host of men going to hunt met him. And he saw in the midst of the host a man of high rank, and Peredur saluted him. 'Choose, sir, whether you will go to the court, or come with me to hunt. And I will send one of my bodyguard to commend you to a daughter of mine, who is there, to take food and drink until I return from the hunt; and if your quests be such as I can obtain for you, you shall have them gladly.'

And the King sent a little yellow-haired servant with him; and when they came to the court, the lady had risen and was going to wash. And Peredur came forward, and she saluted Peredur joyfully, and permitted him by her side. And they took their dinner; and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed loudly, till every one in the court heard it. And then the little
W.B. 172 yellow-haired servant said to the lady, 'By my faith,' said he, 'if you have ever had a husband,[185] this *macwy* it was; and if he has not been your husband, your heart and thoughts are on him.' And the little yellow-haired servant went towards the King, and said that it seemed most probable to him that the *macwy* he had met was his daughter's husband; and 'if not her husband, I think he will be her husband immediately, if you don't look sharp.' 'What is your advice, boy?' said the King.[2]
'My advice is to let loose brave men on him, and to
R.B. 238 seize him, until you know certain about it.' And he let loose men on Peredur, to seize him and to put him in gaol. And the maiden came to meet her father, and asked him, 'For what reason have you caused the *macwy* from Arthur's court to be imprisoned?' 'Of a truth,' said he, 'he won't be free to-night, nor to-morrow, nor the day after; and he shall not come from the place where he is.'

She made no objection to the King about what he said; and came to the *macwy*. 'Is it unpleasant for you to be here?' 'I should not mind if I were not.' 'Your

[185] The word 'gwr', husband, man, is undoubtedly used here in the sense of paramour.

bed and state shall not be worse than that of the King, and the best songs in the court shall you have, according to your command. And should it be more pleasing to you than before that my bed should be here for me to talk with you, you shall have it gladly.' 'I will not refuse that,' said Peredur.[1] And he was that night in prison, and the maiden did that which she had promised him.

And next day Peredur heard a tumult in the city. 'Ah, maiden fair, what tumult is this?' said Peredur. 'The forces of the King and his power are coming to this city to-day.' 'What are they seeking thus?' 'There W.B. 173
is an Earl near here with two earldoms, and he is as powerful as a King; and there will be a combat between them to-day.' 'I beg you', said Peredur, 'to obtain a horse and arms for me to go and watch the combat, and, on my honour, I will return to my prison.' 'Gladly', said she, 'will I arrange for a horse and arms for you.' And she gave him a horse and arms, and a bright red surcoat over his arms, and a yellow shield on his shoulder. And he came to the combat; and whoever of the Earl's men met him that day he overthrew them all to the ground. And Peredur[14] came back to the prison.

The maiden asked Peredur the news; and he said not one word to her. And she went to ask her father the R.B. 239
news, and she asked who of the bodyguard had been the best. He said he did not recognize him. 'He was a man with a red surcoat over his armour, and a yellow shield on his shoulder.' And she smiled, and came to

the place[1] where Peredur was; and good was his respect that night.

And three days in succession Peredur slew the Earl's men; and before anybody knew who he might be, he returned to his prison. And the fourth day Peredur slew the Earl himself; and the maiden came before her father, and asked news of him. 'Good news,' said the King. 'The Earl is slain,' said he,[2] 'and I own both earldoms.' 'And do you know who slew him?' 'I do know,' said the King. 'The knight of the red surcoat and the yellow shield slew him.' 'Lord,' said she, 'I
W.B. 174 know who he is.' 'By God,' said he, 'who is he?' 'Lord,' said she,[1] 'he is the knight whom you have in prison.'

He came to the place[1] where Peredur was, and saluted him, and told him he would repay the service he had rendered, as he himself might desire. And when they went to eat, Peredur was placed on one side of the King, and the maiden on the other side of Peredur. And after eating,[2] 'I will give you my daughter,' said the King to Peredur,[2] 'in marriage, and half of my kingdom with her; and I will give you the two earldoms as a marriage-gift.' 'Lord,' said Peredur,[1] 'God repay you. I have not come here to marry.' 'What do you seek, sir?' 'I am seeking news of the Fort of Wonders.' 'Greater is the chieftain's thought than that which we are seeking,' said the maiden. 'News of the fort shall you have, and a retinue with you through my father's dominions, and plenty of supplies. And you, sir, are the
R.B. 240 man I love best.' And then she said to him,[2] 'Go

across yonder mountain, and you will see a lake and a fortress in the middle of the lake, and that is called the Fort of Wonders, and we know nothing of the wonders of it, save it is called so.'

And Peredur came towards the fort, and the gate of the fort was open. And when he came to the hall, the door was open, and as he came inside, he saw chessmen in the hall, and every one of the two sets of pieces were playing against each other. And the one that he supported lost the game; and the other gave a shout as if W.B. 175
they were men. And he was angry, and he took the pieces into his lap, and hurled the board into the lake.

And while he was so, behold the black maiden came in, and said to Peredur,[1] 'May the grace of God not be with you. More frequently have you caused evil than good.' 'What do you seek of me, black maiden?' said Peredur.[1] 'You have caused the Empress' chess-board to be lost, and she would not have had that for her empire.' 'Is there a way to recover the board?' 'There is: if you go to Caer Ysbidinongyl,[176] there is there a black man, who is laying waste many of the Empress' dominions; and if you slay him, you will recover the chess-board; and if you go there, you will not return alive.' 'And will you be my guide there?' said Peredur.[1] 'I will show you the road there,' said she.[1]

He came to Caer Ysbidinongyl; and fought with the black man, and the black man sought quarter of Peredur. 'I will give you quarter. Cause the board to be in the place it was in when I came into the hall.' And thereupon the black maiden came, and said to him,[1]

'Yea,' said she,[1] 'the curse of God be on you for your work, leaving the Oppression alive which is wasting the Empress' dominions.' 'I promised him his life,' said
R.B. 241 Peredur, 'in order to recover the chess-board.' 'The chess-board is not in the place you first found it in. Go back and slay him.'

Peredur went and slew the black[1] man, and when he came to the court, the black maiden was in the court. 'Ha, maiden,' said Peredur, 'is the Empress here?' 'Between me and God, you shall not see her now, un-
W.B. 176 less you slay the Oppression that is in yonder forest.' 'What kind of Oppression is that?' 'There is a stag there who is as swift as the swiftest bird,[186] and one horn has he in his forehead, as long as a spear-shaft, and as sharp-pointed is it as the sharpest-pointed thing. And he feeds on[187] the tops of trees and what grass[188] there is in the forest; and slays every animal that he meets[189] therein. And those which he slays not die of hunger. And worse than that, he comes every night and drinks up the fish-pond for his drink, and he leaves the fish exposed, and most of them die before water comes back into it.' 'Ah, maiden,' said Peredur, 'will you come and show me that animal?' 'I will not go; no man has dared to go into the forest for more than a year. There is a lap-dog of the lady's here; and it will rouse the stag, and will come towards you with it, and the stag will attack you.'

[186] 'Adeinyawc', the Welsh Mercury.
[187] W.B. 'phori'=feeds on; R.B. 'thorri'=breaks.
[188] W.B. 'wellt', grass; R.B. 'well', the best. [189] W.B. 'finds'.

The lap-dog went as a guide to Peredur; and it raised the stag, and it came towards the place where Peredur was. And the stag attacked Peredur, and he stepped back off his track to one side, and struck its head off with a sword. And while he was looking at the stag's head, he saw a lady riding coming to him; and she put the lap-dog into the sleeve of her mantle, and the head between herself and the saddle-bow. And a red gold torque was round its neck.[190] 'Ah, sir,' said she, 'discourtesy have you done, slaying the fairest jewel there was in my dominions.' 'I was asked to do so; and is there any way whereby I can obtain your friendship?' 'There is: go to the side of yonder[1] mountain, and there you will see a grove, and at the bottom of the grove there is a stone, and there[1] demand a man to tilt three times. You will get my friendship.' R.B. 242 W.B. 177

Peredur journeyed forth, and came near to the grove, and demanded a man to tilt. And a black man arose from below the stone, and under him a bony horse, and large rusty armour on him and the horse. And they tilted. And as Peredur threw the black man to the ground, he leaped into the saddle. And Peredur dismounted and drew his sword; and thereupon the black man disappeared, and Peredur's horse with him, and his own horse, so that he got no second sight of them.

And Peredur walked the whole length of the mountain, and on the other side of the mountain he saw a fortress in a river valley, and he came to the fortress.

[190] W.B. (margin), 'of the stag'.

And as he came to the fortress, he saw a hall; and the door of the hall open, and he came inside. And he saw a dark lame man sitting at the end of the hall, and Gwalchmai sitting on one side of him. And the horse which the black man had taken he saw[191] in the same stall as Gwalchmai's horse. And they were joyful at seeing Peredur; and he went and sat down on the other side of the dark man.

And thereupon, behold,[1] a yellow-haired youth fell[192] on his knee before Peredur, and sought Peredur's friendship. 'Lord,' said the youth, 'I it was who came in the guise of the black maiden to Arthur's court; when you hurled the chess-board; and when you slew the black man of Ysbidinongyl; and when you slew the stag; and when you fought the man from the stone.
W.B. 178 And it was I who came with the head bleeding on the dish; and with the spear, from whose tip there was a stream of blood down to the fist along the shaft;[193] and the head was your cousin's; and it was the witches of Gloucester who had slain him; and it was they who lamed your uncle. And I am your cousin. And there
R.B. 243 is a prediction that you will avenge that.'

And Peredur and Gwalchmai decided to send to Arthur and his bodyguard to ask him to come against the witches. And they commenced to fight with the witches, and one of the witches slew a man of Arthur's in front of Peredur, and Peredur forbade her. And a second

[191] W.B. 'And Peredur saw his horse'. [192] W.B. 'came'.
[193] R.B. 'ar hyt y paladyr': W.B. scribe has, however, 'gwayw', 'lance', or 'spear'.

time the witch slew a man in front of Peredur; and a second time Peredur forbade her. And a third time the witch slew a man in front of Peredur. And Peredur drew his sword, and struck the witch on the topmost part of the helm, till he clove the helm in twain, and all her armour and her head. And she gave a cry; and urged the other witches to flee, and said that it was Peredur, the man who had learnt knighthood with them, and who was destined to slay them.

And thereupon Arthur and his bodyguard set upon the witches, and the whole of the Witches of Gloucester were slain. And thus is it told of the Fort of Wonders.

PEREDUR

(Fragment B from the White Book, pp. 286–90.)

W.B. p. 286 EARL EFRAWC owned an earldom in the North, and seven sons had he. And he maintained himself, not from his dominions principally, but from tournaments, and combats and wars. And at last he and his six sons were slain. And he had a seventh son; and he was not of an age to go to battle; and Peredur was his name.

And his mother was a prudent woman, and she thought about her son and his dominions. And she set out for a wilderness with her son, and from habitations came to a desert. And she took no one with her except puny, feeble men, who knew nothing about wars and battles, nor about horses and arms.

And there was a forest near them; and the boy went to the forest every day to play, and to shoot arrows[1] ahead of him. And one day he saw a flock of goats, belonging to his mother, and two hinds which were near them. Peredur drove the goats inside, and the hinds with them, by his valour and his prowess.

And he came to his mother, and said, ' My mother,' said he, ' I have seen a strange thing in the forest: two of your goats which had lost their horns; through (wandering) far they lost them; and I drove them inside along with the others, and they had gone wild,

[1] Lit. ' pieces of wood '. The figure is that of a child's bow and arrows, made of twigs, a common plaything in Wales, even as late as fifty years ago.

and I had trouble in driving them in along with the others.' They went to see if that were true; and all who saw it marvelled thereat.

And one day they saw three knights walking along the road, which was by the side of the forest; and these men were Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar, and Gweir, the son of Gwestyl, and Ywein, the son of Uryen. And Gwalchmai[2] was keeping the track, following the horseman who had divided the apples in Arthur's court.

'My mother,' said Peredur, 'what are those yonder?' 'Angels, my son,' said she. 'I will go as an angel with them.'

And Peredur came to the road. And he asked him, 'Have you seen a knight going along this road?' 'I don't know', said Peredur, 'what a knight is.' 'The same thing as I am,' said Gwalchmai. 'If you would tell me what I shall ask of you, I would tell you that which you ask of me.' 'I will tell,' said he. 'What is this?' said Peredur, regarding the saddle. 'A saddle,' said Gwalchmai. And Peredur asked the name of everything, and what could be done with it. And Gwalchmai explained to him. 'Go forward,' said

[2] It will be noted that in this fragment and in fragment C, Gwalchmai takes the place of Owein, and that Owein appears as Ywein. English and continental romance has Owein or Ywein under various disguises, such as Gawain, and the form Gawain is regarded as the equivalent of Gwalchmai. That identification appears to be due to the confusion, apparent in these texts, between the two men, who were credited, on different occasions, with the same adventures.

Peredur, 'I have seen the kind of man you have asked about. And I will go after you as a knight.'

Peredur came to where his mother was. 'My mother,' said he, 'those (here) a while ago were not angels, but knights.' Then his mother swooned. And thereupon Peredur went to where the horses were, which carried firewood, and carried food and drink for
W.B. 287. them from habited places to the desert. And he took the strongest horse he saw, and in the place of a saddle he put a pack-saddle; and with twigs he counterfeited what he had seen with Gwalchmai.

And he came to where his mother was. Then his mother recovered from her swoon at once. 'Yes, lord,' said she, 'and do you wish to set forth?' 'Yes,' said he. 'Stay, I have words of advice for you.' 'Speak quickly,' said he, 'and I will wait for them.' 'Go straight on', said she, 'to Arthur's court. There there are the best of men, and the bravest. When you see a church, say your Paternoster to it. Should you see food and drink, take it, if you should need it, and if no one has the courtesy and goodness to give it you. Should you hear a cry of distress, go thereto; and especially (if it be) a woman's cry of distress. Should you see a fair jewel, take it, and give it to another to sing well of you. Should you see a fair woman, woo her; she will consider you a better man, even if she desires you not.'

Thereupon Peredur journeyed forth, with a bundle of sharp-pointed darts with him. And he was two days and two nights travelling in the wilderness and desert, without either food or drink. And he came to a great

wood; and in the wood he saw a clearing; and in the clearing he saw a tent; and thinking it a church, he sang his Paternoster to it. And he came towards the door of the tent, and he saw, near the door, a golden chair; and a maid with a lovely face sitting in the chair, with a frontlet of gold in her forehead, and a valuable stone in it, and a massive gold ring on her hand. Peredur dismounted and came inside; and joyful was the maiden at his coming, and she welcomed him.

At the end of the tent he saw a table, and two flasks full of wine, and two loaves of white bread, and chops from a sucking-pig. 'My mother', said he, 'told me, if I saw food and drink, to take it.' 'Come to the table, sir, gladly,' said she, 'and the grace of God be with you.' Peredur came to the table, and Peredur took half the food and liquor, and left the other in front of the maiden. And when he had finished eating, he came to where the maiden was, and said, 'My mother told me,' said he, 'should I see a fair jewel, to take it.' 'It is not I, my soul, who will refuse it you,' said the lady. Peredur took the ring, and bent on his knee, and gave her a kiss, and went away.

And thereafter, the knight who owned the tent came, and he saw the footprint of the horse at the door. 'Who has been here in my absence?' 'A wonderful man has been here,' said she; and she told him all as it had happened. 'Was he with you?' said he. 'He was not, by my faith,' said she. 'By my faith, I believe you not,' said he, 'and until I meet him to avenge my disgrace, you shall not be two nights in the same house.'

And thereupon the Proud Man of the Clearing arose, and went to seek him.

W.B. 288 Meanwhile Peredur travelled straight towards Arthur's court. And before he came to the court, the other knight came to the court, and he gave a massive gold ring to the man at the gate to hold his horse, while he came himself inside to where Arthur was, and Gwenhwyfar, and a host. And the knight took the goblet[3] from Gwenhwyfar's hand; and he hurled the liquor on her face and her breast, and he gave her a blow on the ear, and said loudly to her, 'If any wants to strive for this goblet[3] with me, and to revenge the insult to Gwenhwyfar, let him come after me to the meadow, and I will await him there.' Then all there hung down their heads, and kept silent, lest some one from among them should be implored to go after the knight. It seemed to them that no one would do that kind of act, unless there were enchantment and magic, or it were impossible for any one to touch him because of his strength.

And thereon, behold, Peredur came into the hall on his bony dapple-grey horse, and slovenly trappings of twigs. And Cai was standing on the floor of the hall. Said Peredur, 'Tall man yonder, is Arthur here?' 'What do you want with Arthur?' said Cai. 'My mother commanded me to come to Arthur, to honour me as an honourable knight.' 'By my faith,' said Cai,

3 The text has 'goluwrch', 'casket', vice 'gorflwch', 'goblet', a term used subsequently in the story. Evidently a scribal error, or a case of metathesis.

'you come too ill-furnished with horse and arms.' And thereon the bodyguard perceived him, and they derided him, and hurled sticks at him; and they were glad to find an excuse to be silent about the knight who had come to the meadow.

And thereupon, behold a dwarf came in, who had come there more than a year before; and he had spoken not one word since he came there, until he spoke when he perceived Peredur. 'Ha! ha! fair Peredur, son of Efrawc, the grace of God be with you, chief of warriors and flower of knights.' 'Between me and God,' said Cai, 'behold, ill it is to behave thus; to pass a year in Arthur's court dumb, and to call this man, in the presence of Arthur and his bodyguard, the chief of warriors and the flower of knights.' And Cai struck the dwarf a blow on the ear till he was senseless.

And thereupon, behold the female dwarf came inside, and uttered the same speech to Peredur as the dwarf had said. Then Cai kicked the dwarfess until she was senseless.

'Long man,' said Peredur then, 'show me where Arthur is.' 'Stop your noise,' said Cai, 'and go after the knight who went to the meadow, and throw him to the ground, and take his horse and arms, and after that you shall get made an honourable knight.' 'I will do that,' said Peredur; and Peredur went to the meadow where the knight was.

'Say,' said the knight to Peredur, 'have you seen any one of the court coming after me? and if you have not seen, go again to the court, and command Arthur, or

one of his bodyguard, to come here to joust with me, and if he come not immediately, I shall go away.' 'The long man who is there directed me to overthrow you, and to take for myself your horse and arms and goblet.' The knight approached Peredur wrathfully, and hit him a most grievous blow with the butt-end of his lance between the shoulder and the neck. 'Ah, youth,' said Peredur, 'my mother's servants played not so with me.' And Peredur shot the knight with a sharp-pointed dart in the eye, until it was through the back of the neck, and he was dead on the ground.

'Of a truth,' said Gwalchmai to Cai, 'evil did you do to the fool man whom you sent from here to the meadow. And if he has been overthrown, the rank of a worthy man will be upon him; and if he be slain, the status of a worthy man will be upon him, and an everlasting shame to Arthur and his men, and a sin upon us all. And I will go to the meadow to see what may be there.'

And then Gwalchmai came to the meadow, and when he came, Peredur was dragging the man behind by his arms. 'Stop,' said Gwalchmai, 'I will take the arms from off the man for you.' 'It is not easy', said Peredur, 'for this iron coat to come off the man.'

Thereupon, Gwalchmai removed all the arms from the knight, and put them on Peredur, and asked Peredur to come with him to the court to be made an honourable knight. 'I will not go, by my faith, until I avenge on the long man the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess. And take you the goblet to Gwenhwyfar,

and tell Arthur that I will be a man to him wherever I may be, and will render him the service I can.'

Thereupon Gwalchmai came to the court, and related the adventure as it had happened.

Then Peredur went onwards; and as he was proceeding, behold a knight met him. 'Whence come you?' said he, 'and are you a man to Arthur?' 'Yes, by my faith,' said he. 'A good place you have allied yourself in.' 'Why?' said Peredur. 'Because I have ever been a frustrator of, and an outlaw from, Arthur, and those who have encountered me I have slain.' And thereupon they tilted. And they tilted not long ere Peredur hurled him, head backwards, to the ground, and the knight sought quarter. 'You shall have quarter,' said Peredur, 'by your faith to go to Arthur's court, to declare that it was I who overthrew you in honour and service to Arthur. And tell him that I will not go to the court until I get vengeance on the long man for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.' And the knight came on his faith to Arthur's court, and related the whole of the happening, and the threat to Cai.

And Peredur thereupon journeyed onwards; and in the same week he overthrew sixteen knights; and they went to Arthur's court on the same undertaking as the W.B. 290
first of the knights and with the threat to Cai. And great reproof did Cai get from Arthur and his warriors, and Cai was vexed thereat.

Meanwhile Peredur journeyed onwards, and he came to a great lonely wood, and on the edge of the wood, a lake. And on the other side of the lake a fair

court, and a large battlemented fort around it, and on the bank of the lake a grey-haired man was sitting on a cushion of brocaded silk, and a garment of brocaded silk on him. And his servants were fishing in boats on the lake. And when the grey-haired man saw Peredur, he arose and went to the court, and he was lame. And Peredur came inside the hall, and he saw the grey-haired man sitting on a cushion of brocaded silk, and a large fresh fire in front of him. And a number of the host arose to meet him, and disarrayed him. And the grey-haired man struck his hand on the cushion, and commanded Peredur to sit on the cushion. And Peredur sat down and talked with the grey-haired man.

And after finishing eating, they talked, and the grey-haired man asked Peredur, 'Do you know how to use the sword?' 'Were I taught, I think I would know.' 'He who will know how to play with the single-stick and shield will know how to wield the sword.' The grey-haired man had two sons, one with auburn hair, and one with yellow hair. 'Arise,' said he, 'and go and play with a single-stick and shield.' And the boys went to play. 'Say, my soul,' said the man, 'is there any difference in the play of the boys?' 'There is,' said he to him; 'the[4] boy could long ago have drawn blood from the other.' 'My soul, arise,' said the grey-haired man, 'and draw blood from the yellow-haired boy, if you can.' Peredur raised the single-stick and shield, and struck the yellow-haired boy till his eyebrow was

[4] The qualifying adjective 'yellow-haired' is missing from the text.

over his eye. 'Come and sit down,' said the grey-haired man. 'There is none in this island better than you at wielding a sword. And I am your uncle, the brother of your mother. Give up, henceforth, your mother's language, and I will teach you what to say; and I will make you an honourable knight henceforth. Whenever you see a thing that is strange to you, keep silent about it, and question not.' And when it was time for them to go to sleep, they went.

And when Peredur saw the day next day, he set forth with his uncle's permission. And he came to a great wood, and at the end of the wood he came to a meadow; and at the other side of the meadow, he saw a great fort and a beautiful court. And he entered the court; and when he came into the hall, he saw a grey-haired man sitting and many *macwyaid* around him. And everybody arose to meet him, and disarrayed him, and put him to sit on one side of the grey-haired man. And when they went to eat, Peredur was seated on one side of the grey-haired man. And after finishing . . .

Text C from the White Book, cols. 605–48

W.B. 605 . . .should I need it.' 'Come to the table gladly, and the grace of God be with you.'

And thereupon, Peredur took half the food and liquor; and the other half he left for the maiden. And when he had finished eating, he came to where the maiden was, and took the ring from off her hand, and bent down on his knee, and kissed the maiden, and said to her, 'My mother,' said he, 'told me, if I saw a fair jewel, to take it.' 'It is not I who will refuse it to you,' said the maiden. And Peredur mounted his horse, and went away.

And at once thereafter, behold the knight who owned the pavilion came. He was the Proud Man of the Clearing, and he perceived the footprint of the horse at the door of the pavilion. 'Tell me,' said he, 'maiden, who has been here in my absence?' 'A man strange in appearance,' said she; and she told him all his state and appearance. 'Tell me, my soul,' said he, 'lay[1] he with you?' 'He did not, by my faith,' said she. 'By my faith,' said he, 'I believe you not; and until I myself meet that man to avenge my anger upon him, you shall not be two nights in the same house together.' The knight went away to seek Peredur.

And meanwhile Peredur went straightway to
W.B. 606 Arthur's court; and before Peredur came to the court, that man dismounted at the gate, and he gave a massive

[1] Lit. 'was'. The meaning, however, is obvious.

ring of gold to the man who held his horse, while he himself went to the court. And he came to the hall, in riding garments, to where Arthur and his bodyguard and *gwyrda* were, and where Gwenhwyfar and her maidens were. And a page of the chamber, who was standing in front of Gwenhwyfar, with a golden goblet in his hand, gave it into the hand of Gwenhwyfar, and the moment he gave it, the knight took the goblet quickly, and threw the liquor over her face and breast, and struck her a blow on the ear, and went out by the door, and said, 'If any one wishes reparation for the goblet and the blow on the ear, let him come after me, and I will await him there.' And the knight came to the meadow. Then all hung down their heads, and none offered to go after him, because of the greatness of the might they thought the knight possessed, and the villainy of his prowess, or else his enchantment and magic.

And thereupon, behold Peredur came to the hall on the back of his bony, dapple-grey horse, with the slovenly trappings upon it. Cai was standing on the floor of the hall. Said Peredur to him, 'Tall man, tell me where Arthur is.' 'What do you want with him?' said Cai. 'My mother commanded me to come to him to honour me as an honourable knight.' 'Between me and God,' said Cai, 'you are too ill-furnished with horse and arms'; and he pointed him out to the bodyguard to be mocked, and they hurled sticks at him, until they forgot the other sport.[2]

[2] i.e., the coming of the knight who had insulted Gwenhwyfar.

W.B. 607 And thereupon, behold the dwarf came in and the dwarfess, to whom Arthur had given shelter a year before, and he had spoken no word to any man in all of Arthur's host, until he saw Peredur, and then he said, 'Ah! fair Peredur, son of Efrawc, the grace of God be with you, chief of warriors and flower of knights.' 'Of a truth,' said Cai, 'wrong have you done thus, to be a year in Arthur's court, having choice of your companions[3] and choice of victuals, and you have not spoken one word till you saw yonder man, whom you call the flower of warriors and the candle of knights, to the shame of Arthur and his warriors.' And he gave the dwarf a blow on the ear till he lay senseless.

And thereupon, behold the female dwarf came; and if the dwarf had been full of joy, the dwarfess was more joyful at seeing Peredur, and thereupon, Cai kicked the dwarfess till she lay senseless.

'Tall man,' said Peredur, 'show me Arthur.' 'Stop your noise,' said Cai, 'and go to the meadow after the knight who went thither, and bring the goblet here, and take his horse and arms for yourself.' 'Tall man,' said he, 'that will I do'; and he turned his horse's head about, and out; and he came to the meadow to the proud knight.

'Say,' said the knight, 'have you seen any one of the court coming after me here?' 'I have not seen,' said he. 'The tall man, who is there, commanded me to come here to fetch the goblet to Gwenhwyfar, and to take for myself the horse and arms from you.' 'Go you

3 Lit. 'fellow-talkers'.

to the court,' said the knight, 'and command from me Arthur or one of his men to come to tilt with me. If he come not immediately, I will not wait for him.' 'By my faith,' said Peredur, 'choose of your free will or without your will, I will to have the goblet and the horse and the arms.' The knight was wrathful towards Peredur, and rushed at him, and with the butt-end of his lance he hit Peredur a severe blow between the shoulder and the neck. 'Ah, youth,' said Peredur, 'my mother's servants played not so with me. Now I will play with you'; and he shot him with a dart, and hit him in the eye, till it came out at the back of his neck, and thereupon the knight fell to the ground dead. W.B. 608

And Gwalchmai[4] came to Cai. 'Between me and God, evil did you to the fool man whom you sent after the knight. If the knight overthrow him, the status of a good knight will he be deemed to have had.[5] If he kill him, the shame just as before, and the crime of that fool man's death in addition. I will go to learn what fate has befallen him.'

And when Gwalchmai came to the meadow, Peredur was dragging the knight up and down the meadow by the fringe of his coat of mail. 'What are you doing that for?' said Gwalchmai. 'I am trying to get the iron coat off,' said Peredur. 'Stop, sir,' said he, 'and I will take it off.' And thereupon, Gwalchmai stripped the arms from off the knight, and gave them to Peredur, and said to him, 'Look, here are good arms and a horse

4 See note 2 to Fragment B.

5 Lit. 'there be on him'.

W.B. 609 for you. Come with me to the court to be honoured as an honourable knight.' 'I will not go, by my faith,' said Peredur, 'until I obtain on the tall man vengeance for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess. But take from me the goblet to Gwenhwyfar, and tell Arthur if I can render service, in his name will I render it, and it is a man to him that I will be.'

And thereupon, Gwalchmai came to the court, and related the whole of the occurrence to Arthur and Gwenhwyfar, and the threat that Peredur had for Cai.

And then Peredur journeyed forth; and as he was travelling, behold a knight met him. 'Who are you?' said he, 'and are you a man to Arthur?' 'Yes, by my faith,' said Peredur. 'A fine place to have allied yourself with Arthur!' 'Why?' said Peredur. 'Because I have ever been an outlaw from Arthur, and whatever men of his I have encountered, I have slain them all.' There was no more than that ere they got ready to tilt; and Peredur overthrew that knight; and he sought quarter of Peredur. 'You shall have quarter,' said he, 'by giving your faith to go to Arthur's court, and to declare to Arthur that it was I who overthrew you in Arthur's honour. And tell him I shall never come to his court until I get on the tall man, who is there, vengeance for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.' The knight gave his faith thereto, and went straight to Arthur's court, and there declared everything Peredur had commanded him to, and especially the threat to Cai.

W.B. 610 And Peredur journeyed onwards. And in the same

week he overthrew sixteen knights, and he let them all proceed to Arthur's court upon their faith with the same message as the first knight had taken, and each one of them with the threat to Cai. And great was the reproof Cai got from Arthur and his bodyguard.

And Peredur came to a great lonely wood; and on the side of the wood there was a lake. On the farther edge of the lake there was a court, and a large beautiful fort around it; and on the edge of the lake, he saw a handsome grey-haired man sitting down on a cushion with a covering of brocaded silk on it, and on the man a garment of brocaded silk. And his servants were fishing from a boat on the lake. And when the grey-haired man perceived Peredur coming to him, he got up, and went to the court; and he was lame. And Peredur went to the court, and when he came to the hall, the grey-haired man was sitting on a cushion of brocaded silk, and a large steady fire was burning in front of him; and a great host arose to meet Peredur to disarray him. And the grey-haired man struck the cushion with his hand for Peredur to sit down; and the grey-haired man and Peredur talked until they went to eat.

And Peredur sat on one side of the grey-haired man; and after finishing eating, the grey-haired man asked Peredur, 'Do you know how to wield the sword?' Said he, 'Were I taught, I should know.' 'Yes,' said the grey-haired man, 'whoever knows how to play with the single-stick and shield will know how to wield a sword.' The grey-haired man had two sons, a boy with yellow hair, and a boy with auburn hair; and the

man commanded them to go to play with single-sticks
W.B. 611 and shields, and they went. After they had played a short time, the grey-haired man asked Peredur, 'Which of the boys plays the better?' 'It seems to me,' said Peredur, 'the yellow-haired boy could have drawn blood from the auburn-haired boy long ago.' 'Arise,' said the grey-haired man, 'and take the single-stick and shield of the auburn-haired youth, and draw blood from the yellow-haired boy, if you can.' Peredur arose, and took the single-stick and shield, and immediately drew blood from the yellow-haired boy; and then the grey-haired man said, 'Come, sir, and sit down. You are the best man at wielding a sword in the kingdom. I am your uncle, the brother of your mother. Tarry with me this week for you to learn customs and manners. Henceforth cease quoting your mother; and I will be your teacher, and will honour you as an honourable knight. Whenever you see a thing that is strange to you, keep silent about it, and ask naught about it, lest you be blamed.' And abundance of every service obtained they that night until they went to sleep.

When Peredur saw the light of day next day, he arose and took leave of his uncle, and went away. He came to a great lonely wood, and at the end of the wood he saw a flat meadow, and at the other side of the meadow a great fort and a court, and Peredur came to the court. And when he came, he saw a handsome grey-haired man, and a large host of *macwyaid* saw he around him. And all the *macwyaid* arose to meet Peredur, and made Peredur sit on one side of the grey-

haired man. And they talked until they went to eat. W.B. 612
And Peredur sat on one side of the man while eating. And when they had finished eating and were continuing drinking, the grey-haired man asked Peredur if he knew how to wield a sword. 'Were I taught, I should know how to wield a sword,' said Peredur.

There was a huge iron staple in the hall. 'Arise,' said the man to Peredur, 'and take yonder sword, and smite the iron staple.' Peredur took the sword, and smote the staple till it was in two halves, and the sword in two halves. 'Place the two pieces together quickly, and they will unite.' Peredur did so, and the staple and the sword united. And the man commanded him to smite a second blow, and he smote until they were so a second time; and Peredur put them together, and they united just as they had been at their best. And he struck a third blow, until they broke, and neither would unite thereafter. And then the grey-haired man said, 'Come and sit down. You are the best man in the kingdom at wielding a sword. Two-thirds of your valour have you acquired; the third is not acquired. When you have acquired the whole, you will not be surpassed by any one. Your uncle am I, brother to your mother, and the man with whom you stayed last night is my brother.' And they conversed thereafter.

And thereupon he saw two servants coming in and going through the hall into a chamber, and a great spear with them, and three torrents of blood along the shaft. And when the household saw it, they mourned so that it was not easy to listen to them; yet the grey- W.B. 613

haired man interrupted not his speech with Peredur by reason of it; and the man did not tell Peredur what it was, and Peredur asked it not.

And soon after that they saw two maidens coming inside with a large dish with them, and a man's head on it stained with blood; and thereupon at this new wonder the household lamented. And the grey-haired man and Peredur went on drinking until it was time to go to sleep.

Next day in the morning Peredur took his uncle's permission to depart, and that day he came straight to a wood, the largest he had ever seen; and far in the wood he heard a cry of distress, and thither he went. And when he got there, he saw a beautiful auburn-haired woman, with a big horse by her side, and an empty saddle upon it, and a corpse in front of her. And when the woman tried to lift the corpse into the saddle, she could not do so, and thereupon she uttered a cry of distress. 'Heigh ho! good woman,' said Peredur, 'why cry you in distress?' 'Between me and God, Peredur the excommunicate, small deliverance from my cry of distress have I got from you.' 'Why, good woman, am I excommunicate?' 'Because you have been the cause of your mother's death,' said she. 'When you went away, she swooned, and from the effects of that swoon she died. The dwarf and dwarfess, whom you saw in Arthur's court, were nurtured in the court of your father and mother. And I am your foster-sister, and this is my husband. And the knight who is in yonder wood slew the man. Go not you near him,

lest you be slain.' 'You are quite mistaken in blaming me,' said Peredur. 'Owing to my having been so long W.B. 614 with you as I have been, it is not easy for me to conquer him. Stop your cry of distress and your lamentation for the future, and I will bury your husband, and if I can get vengeance, I will avenge him.'

And after they had finished burying the man, they came to the place where the knight was. And the knight asked Peredur who he was, and whence he had come. 'From Arthur's court have I come,' said Peredur. 'Are you a man to Arthur?' said the knight. 'Yes,' said Peredur. 'A fine place to ally yourself in!' said the knight, 'I would tilt with you.' And forthwith they tilted, and Peredur overthrew the knight immediately, and the knight besought quarter of him.

'Quarter you shall not have,' said Peredur, 'unless you marry this woman at once, and go to Arthur's court as quickly as you can, and tell Arthur and his warriors that it was Peredur who overthrew you for slaying the husband of this woman, (and he) innocent. And tell Arthur I shall never go to his court until I get vengeance on the tall man who is there for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.'

And the knight married the woman, and gave his faith to go to Arthur's court, and to do all that Peredur commanded him. And the knight went to Arthur's court, and did what he was commanded. And thereupon was Cai greatly reproved for having scared Peredur away from the court. And then Gwalchmai said, 'Lord,' said he to Arthur, 'the *macwy* will never

come here so long as Cai is here. And Cai will not go from here.' 'By my faith,' said Arthur, 'I will go to search the waste places of the Isle of Britain for him until I find him; and then let both of them do the worst they can to each other.'

W.B. 615 And Peredur went on from there to a wooded and lonely desert; and at the end of a great wooded waste he saw a large ivy-clad fort, and a long wall of wooded waste around it, and many towers round about. And he came to the gate, and with the shaft of his lance he hammered at the gate. And behold, immediately a squalid red-haired youth at the opening above his head, giving him his choice whether he should let him in, or tell the chief of the fort that he was there. 'It will please me best,' said Peredur, 'if you tell the chief of the fort that I am here'; and the youth informed him that Peredur was at the gate, and he came quickly to open it. And he came to the hall that was there, and in the hall he saw eighteen red-headed youths, all with the same appearance, the same growth, the same shape, and the same clothing. And very joyful were the youths at seeing Peredur, and they disarrayed him, and talked with him. And thereupon he saw five maidens coming from a chamber into the hall; and he felt certain that never had he seen a person like unto the chief of them. She had on her an old garment of brocaded silk, so that he could see the bare skin through the old brocaded silk. Whiter was it than bloom of crystal. Her hair and her two eye-brows were blacker than polished jet. Two red spots were on her two cheeks;

redder were they than red roses.[6] That maiden welcomed Peredur, and embraced him, and sat by his side.

Then he saw two nuns coming in, and a flask full of W.B. 616
wine with one of them, and six loaves of white bread with the other. And they said to the maiden, 'Lady,' said they, 'God knows that in the convent nigh to there is to-night neither food nor liquor, save a like quantity as this.' Thereupon they caused the food and drink to be placed in front of Peredur, beseeching him to take what he wished of it. 'Not so will I do with this much of food,' said Peredur; and he himself divided it, as well as he could, equally among them all. And when they had finished eating, Peredur asked for a place to sleep in; and then they came with him to a fair well-arranged chamber to make ready a comfortable bed with old clothes. And Peredur went to sleep in it.

And then the squalid red-headed youths advised the maiden to go and offer herself to Peredur either as wife or mistress. 'Between me and God,' said she, 'it would be an unseemly thing for a maiden, who has never had anything to do with a man, to go and offer herself to any man at all. Even if the chief desired me, it would be shameful for me to do what he desired.' 'By our faith,' said they, 'if you will not do this, we will leave you forthwith to your enemies.'

And then the maiden arose, and sobbing, and weeping, she opened the door of the chamber. And through the opening of the door and her weeping, Peredur awoke,

6 'Fion'. Spurrell's Dictionary gives 'rose'; Anwyl, however, renders it as 'foxgloves', cf. Ir. 'sion'.

and asked the lady, 'Why do you weep?' 'I will tell you, lord,' said she. 'My father was a strong prince-like earl, and he is dead. And the best earldom in the kingdom was this; and he had no issue but myself. The
W.B. 617 son of another earl sought me of my father, and I would not have him of my own free will, and my father would not give me against my will. Now that young earl has conquered all my dominions, except this one house; but through bravery, the men, my foster-brothers, the youths you have seen, have supported this house thus far. For the future, there is neither food nor drink, save what the nuns, to whom the country is free, supply us with. And to-morrow morning is the time for them to conquer this house. Therefore have I come, lord, to ask your advice thereon, for should he seize me to-morrow, he will deliver me to the grooms of his horses. If you will either take us away from here, or defend us here, you shall have me to your will.' 'Go you', said he, 'to sleep, and weep not, and I will not leave you without doing one of these things.'

The maiden went back to sleep, and next day in the morning the maiden came to Peredur, and greeted him. 'Have you any fresh news?' said Peredur. 'I have not,' said she, 'my lord, so long as you are well, save that the earl and his host are round the house, calling for a man to tilt with.' 'Get ready my horse for me, and I will go to tilt.' And Peredur went immediately to the meadow, and tilted with the knight who was there. And Peredur overthrew him at once; and as many as came against him till the time of nones he

overthrew. And late during nones there came against him a knight, a warrior armed to the teeth, with chain armour on him, and tilted with Peredur, and Peredur W.B. 618 overthrew him immediately, and he sought quarter of Peredur. 'What rank of man are you?' said Peredur. 'I am the commander of the Earl's bodyguard,' said he. 'And have you any of this Countess' dominions?' said Peredur. 'I have', said he, 'a third of her dominions.' 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'you shall have no quarter for your life, unless you restore that third to her, and all the goods you have taken therefrom, and food for a hundred men to be sent to her to-night, along with drink for them, to yonder castle. And you shall be a prisoner. Otherwise your life shall not be spared.' 'You shall have', said the knight, 'the whole of what you demand.' And then Peredur came to the fort, and informed the maiden of all that had happened, and more full of joy was she towards Peredur that night than the night before, and plenty of food and drink they had that night. And when it was time to go to sleep, they went.

And next day in the morning Peredur came to the meadow, and whatever knights came against him that day he overthrew; and late during nones there came against him a skilled proud knight, and Peredur overthrew him immediately, and he sought quarter of Peredur. 'What rank of man are you?' said Peredur. 'I am the Earl's steward,' said he. 'And have you any of this Countess' dominions?' 'I have one third of her dominions,' said he. 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'quarter

for your life you shall have not, unless you restore to the Countess that third of her dominion, and the damage therefrom, and food for two hundred men to-night at the court, with liquor, and horses and arms for them. And yourself in prison.' 'You shall gladly have', said the steward, 'all you have noted.' And Peredur came
W.B. 619 to the fort, and that night they passed joyously.

On the third day Peredur came to the meadow, and that day he overthrew whatever knights came against him, until it was almost night. And then, when he was tired, the Earl himself came against him to tilt with him, and Peredur overthrew the Earl at once; and then Peredur asked him who he was. 'I am the Earl,' said he. 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'if you wish to obtain quarter for your life, give the young Countess her own dominion, and your own earldom in addition, to be at her will. And food for three hundred men, and liquor to be brought to the court to-night, and horses and arms for them.' 'She shall have all that,' said the Earl, 'as you have noted.' And Peredur came in that night more joyful than any night. And more joyful than ever were they towards him in the Countess' court.

And next day, in the morning, Peredur took leave of the maiden to go away. 'Och, my brother and my soul,' said the maiden, 'go not from me so quickly as that.' 'I must go, by my faith,' said Peredur, 'and had I not loved you, I should not have been here a second night.' 'Ah, sir,' said the maiden, 'and tell me who you are.' 'I will tell you,' said he: 'I am Peredur, the son of Efrawc. And should there come upon you any need or

any onset at all, let me know, and I will defend you, if I can.'

And Peredur travelled on thence until he met a lady riding on a lean tired horse; and the lady greeted Peredur. Then Peredur asked her who she was, and what journey she was upon, and then the lady told Peredur all about her mischance and disgrace. She was the W.B. 620 wife of the Proud Man of the Clearing. 'Yea,' said Peredur, 'because of me you have suffered the whole of that disgrace, and I will take vengeance on him who did it to you.' And thereupon, behold the knight came to them, and he asked Peredur at once if he had seen the kind of knight he was inquiring about. 'What do you want with him,' said Peredur, 'especially as your mistress is innocent? I am the knight you are inquiring about; and behold I will show you it is I.' And Peredur charged him at a brisk bound, and hurled him disgracefully to the ground; and then the knight sought quarter of Peredur. 'Quarter shall you have not,' said Peredur, 'unless you go to every place you have travelled through with the maiden, and declare to all that she is innocent.' 'Gladly will I go,' said the knight. And Peredur took his faith thereto.

And Peredur journeyed thence until he saw a castle, and he came to the gate of the castle, and with the butt-end of his lance he hammered at the gate. Then a handsome auburn-haired youth, of the stature of a warrior, came to open the gate, and Peredur thought his age was that of a boy. And Peredur came into the hall, and there Peredur saw a tall handsome woman, and

many maidens with her. And she was glad to see Peredur there.

When they had finished eating, the woman said to Peredur, 'Ah, sir,' said she, 'it is better for you to depart hence to sleep elsewhere.' 'Why?' said Peredur.
W.B. 621 'Nine witches of the Witches of Gloucester come here every night, and their father and mother with them, and we are far more likely to be slain by them than to escape alive.[7] Already have they laid waste the whole of our dominions, save this one house.' 'Between me and God,' said Peredur, 'I will not go hence to-night. What strength I can be of to you, that will I render.'

Towards day, at the end of the night, Peredur heard a cry of anguish. He rose quickly in his shirt and breeches, and seized his sword. When he came, one of the witches was overtaking one of the watchmen. And Peredur struck her on the head until he flattened out her helm and head-piece, as if it were a dish, on her head. And then the witch said, 'Stop striking, oh fair Peredur,' said she, 'your quarter, and that of God.' 'How', said Peredur, 'did you know, hag, that I am Peredur?' 'Because of the destiny that we shall suffer affliction from you; and it is your destiny to take a horse and arms from me, and to be a while with me to learn how to ride, and to learn how to wield a sword and to fight with other arms.' 'Quarter shall you have,' said Peredur, 'if you will leave alone the dominions of this woman'; and to that he took her faith. And Peredur

7 Lit. 'it is not nearer for us to escape alive than to be slain by them'.

returned to the Countess, and took permission to go with the witch and the other witches. And there he W.B. 622 tarried for three weeks in the same house. There he got choice of a horse and arms from those that were there.

Thence Peredur came until he alighted upon a fair flat valley, and at the end of the valley he saw the cell of a hermit, and he came thereunto. And the hermit was glad to see him, and he remained there that night. When Peredur arose next day, snow had fallen the night before, and in front of the cell Peredur saw a wild hawk had slain a wild duck. And Peredur stood on his horse and looked at the raven, which was near the duck, and thought about the blackness of the raven, and the whiteness of the snow, and the redness of the blood; and these three seemed like the woman whom he loved most, that is to say, her hair was blacker than the blackness of the raven or of jet, and her skin was as white as the snow, and her two cheeks were as red as the blood.

Arthur and his bodyguard were meanwhile seeking Peredur, and Arthur himself perceived Peredur in the place where he was standing, and thereupon he said, 'Do you know', said he, 'who is the knight with the long spear yonder?' said he. 'We know not,' said they. Then one of the *macwyaid* came up to Peredur, and asked him who he was. And Peredur answered not, because he was thinking of the woman he loved best. Then the *macwy* struck Peredur, and no harm came therefrom to Peredur. Then Peredur turned angrily

and swiftly on the *macwy*, and hurled him to the ground. After him there came the number of four-and-twenty knights[8] in succession, and Peredur overthrew them
W.B. 623 without saying a single word to them, and he overthrew them every one with one blow. And then Cai came unto him and spoke hardly and roughly to him. Then Peredur took Cai under the jaw with his lance, and hurled him from him until he broke his shoulder-blade, and till Cai was senseless. And while Cai lay senseless, his horse returned empty-saddled to the place where Arthur was; and when Arthur's bodyguard saw the horse coming in that fashion, they hastened to the place where Cai was, and they thought that he had been slain. But the experienced host saw that all his bones would join again, as the joints had escaped; and the most skilful host, which was learned in medicine, attended Cai in Arthur's tent. And Arthur felt it ill that Cai had been so injured, for Arthur loved him greatly.

Then Gwalchmai said, 'It is not right for any one to disturb unreasonably an honourable knight from his thought; for that knight was thinking of the woman he loved best. And if it seems good to you, lord,' said Gwalchmai to Arthur, 'I myself will go to the knight to see if he has moved from his thought, and, if he has not moved, I will ask him courteously to come to visit you.' Then Cai sulked at Gwalchmai, and Cai said to Gwalchmai, 'Certainly, Gwalchmai, you will return with the knight, holding his reins, to Arthur, and small will the credit be to you in conquering a tired weary

[8] Text has 'march' for 'marchog'.

knight. Thus, Gwalchmai, have you vanquished everywhere, through your craft and fair words. Sufficient arms are your deceitful words wherewith to fight a man, W.B. 624 without arms on him save a coat of fine linen, for in such a place neither lance nor sword is needed.' 'Cai,' said Gwalchmai, 'too much have you said to me in anger and in spite. I will bring the knight here without breaking an arm or shoulder-blade.' Then Arthur said to Gwalchmai, 'Well have you thus spoken, Gwalchmai, and wisely. Take the horse and arms you wish, and go to the knight.'

And then Gwalchmai came to the place where Peredur was, and Peredur was still in the same thought. Gwalchmai said then to Peredur, 'If I thought, sir, that it were as pleasing to you to talk with me as it is to me with you, I would talk with you. A messenger am I to you from Arthur, to beseech you to come and visit him. Many have come to you on the same quest.' 'That is true,' said Peredur, 'but discourteously came they to tilt, and I did not wish to be distracted from my thought, for I was thinking of the woman I love most.' And then he told Gwalchmai the whole purport of his thought. 'Between me and God,' said Gwalchmai, 'there was naught ungentle in your thought, and it was not strange that you were enraged at being dragged from your thought.' Said Peredur, 'Tell me, is Cai in W.B. 625 Arthur's court?' 'He is,' said Gwalchmai, 'and he was the last who tilted with you. He fared not well of it, for he has broken his arm and shoulder-blade in the fall he got from your lance.' 'Let that be taken', said

Peredur, 'as a beginning of the vengeance for the insult to the dwarf and dwarfess.' Then Gwalchmai marvelled at his mentioning the dwarf; and thereupon Gwalchmai asked the knight who he was. 'Peredur, the son of Efrawc, am I. Tell me, who are you?' said Peredur. 'I am Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar,' said he.

And thereupon they embraced, and each of them gave his faith to the other to keep firm friendship between them; and they came both together to Arthur. And when Cai heard that they were coming together, he said, 'I knew', said he, 'that Gwalchmai would need not to fight with the knight. It is strange that he acquires fame therefrom; more does he get from his fair, deceitful words than we get from strength in horsemanship and arms.' They took off their arms in Gwalchmai's pavilion, and there they clothed themselves alike. They went, hand in hand, both together, to Arthur's pavilion, and saluted Arthur, and then Gwalchmai said to Arthur, 'Behold, lord, Peredur,
W.B. 626 the son of Efrawc, the man whom for a long time you have been seeking.' 'Welcome to you,' said Arthur; 'had I known that your prowess was such as it is, I would not have let you go when you did go. This, nevertheless, the dwarf and dwarfess, whom Cai insulted in my court, foretold of you, and you have avenged their insult upon Cai.' Thereupon, the Queen came in, she and her hand-maidens; and Peredur saluted her. They were glad to see Peredur, and reverenced him as well as the best in the court. Thence they came to Caerlleon.

The first night Peredur came to Caerlleon, while they were walking in the fort, Angharad of the Golden Hand met them; and Peredur said to her, 'Ah, lady! I will love you above all women, if it seems good to you.' 'It seems not good to me, between me and God,' said she, 'and as long as I live, I shall want you not.' 'By my faith,' said Peredur, 'I will not speak one word to a Christian, until you come to love me most of all men you have seen.'

Next day Peredur at once travelled on forthwith, until he alighted upon a broad highroad on the largest mountain any one ever saw. And at the end of the mountain he saw a fair round-shaped valley, and the borders of the valley he saw were thickly wooded at the edge and rocky. The flat part of the valley he saw was a fair open plain, laid out in meadows, and, contiguous to the wood, he saw large black houses, with strong walls to them. And he dismounted from his horse and led it towards the wood. Some way in the wood, he saw a monstrous huge rock with steep sides; and he saw W.B. 627 one side of it was high and sharp with a road passing by the side thereof. And a lion, bound with chains, did he see there, and the lion was sleeping by the side of the rock. Below the lion he saw a deep pit, and it was full of bones of men and animals. Then Peredur drew his sword quickly, and struck the lion till it lay hanging by the chain over the mouth of the pit. With a second blow he struck the chain, until the lion and the chain fell into the pit.

And then Peredur led his horse across the side of the

rock, and came straightway to the valley. In the centre of the valley he saw a fair castle, and Peredur came to the castle; and inside the meadow which was there he saw a big grey-haired man sitting, and two young boys were hurling the hafts of their knives, and there was walrus-tusk in the hafts. One of the boys was auburn-haired, and the other was yellow-haired, and they were sons to the grey-haired man. And Peredur saluted the grey-haired man. This is the answer the grey-haired man gave him, 'Shame on my gate-keeper's beard.' And thereupon Peredur knew that it was the lion who was his keeper of the gate, and that he had failed to keep his faith.

Then the grey-haired man and his sons came to the castle, and Peredur with them, and they came to a fair hall; and there were fair tables with linen cloths upon
W.B. 628 them, and plenty of food and drink. Then Peredur saw coming into the hall a melancholy old woman and a fair young woman with her. And the two women were the biggest any one had seen. And thus they sat: the grey-haired man at the lower end of the table, and the melancholy woman next to him, and Peredur sat alongside the young woman. And the two boys waited on them. Then the young woman looked steadfastly upon Peredur, and was sad. Peredur asked her why she was sad. 'I will tell you,' said she. 'Ever since I saw you first, I have loved you; and I am grieved and heavy at seeing a youth so well descended as you, with the fate that will be wrought upon you to-morrow.' 'Who will work my fate?' said Peredur. 'Did you see', said she to

Peredur, 'the large black houses on the breast of the hill?' 'I saw them,' said Peredur. 'Men are all they to my father, and my father is yonder grey-haired man, and the young boys[9] are my brothers; and they are causing every one of the host of the valley to come against you, and to-morrow they will slay you.' Said Peredur, 'Do they permit tilting man for man?'[10] 'They do permit,' said she. 'What is the name of this valley?' said Peredur. 'Dyffryn Crwnn,' said she. 'For your lover's sake,' said Peredur, 'will you arrange a lodging and sufficiency of fodder for my horse to-night?' 'I will arrange gladly,' said she. When it was time W.B. 629
for them they went to sleep, after a plentiful banquet.

And next day, in the morning, Peredur heard a noise of men and horses around the castle, and the maiden caused his horse and armour to be brought to Peredur. And Peredur went immediately to the meadow, and the woman and her daughter came to the grey-haired man, and said to him, 'Lord,' said they, 'take the *macwy's* faith that he will tell nothing, wherever he may proceed to, of what he has seen here, and grant him quarter. We will stand for him that he will keep it.' 'I will not take it, by my faith,' said he. And Peredur went to fight with that host; and by evening Peredur had actually slain one-third of the host, without being injured himself. And then the melancholy woman said to the grey-haired man, 'Verily, the *macwy* has slain

9 'gweission ieveing'. See note 24 to 'Pwyll'.

10 Text reads 'a adant wy eb y Peredur ymwan gwr a gwr *a gwr* gadant heb hitheu'. We regard the second 'a gwr' as a scribal superfluity.

many of your host. Grant the *macwy* quarter now.' 'I will not grant it, by my faith,' said the grey-haired man.

And then the yellow-haired youth encountered Peredur, and Peredur slew him. And the grey-haired man's wife and her daughter were looking on when the yellow-haired youth was slain. Then also did they speak to the grey-haired man, 'Lord,' said they, 'grant quarter now to the *macwy*, for he has slain the yellow-haired youth.'

And thereupon the auburn-haired youth encountered Peredur, and Peredur slew him also. And the
W.B. 630 maiden said to her father, 'Fitter would it have been for you to have granted quarter to the *macwy*, before your two sons were slain. We know not if you yourself will escape.' 'Go yourself, maiden,' said he, 'to the *macwy* and seek quarter of him for me and those of my men who have escaped.'

And the maiden came to Peredur, and sought quarter for her father and his men who had escaped. 'I will grant quarter,' said Peredur, 'on this condition, that your father, and his men who have escaped with him, go to do homage to Arthur, and tell Arthur that it is Peredur, the son of Efrawc, who sent them there. I require them to accept baptism and the Christian faith. I myself will send to Arthur to cause this valley to be given to your father and his issue.'

Then they came inside to the grey-haired man; and the grey-haired man and the woman saluted Peredur. Then said the grey-haired man to Peredur, 'Ever since

I have owned this valley, I have seen no Christian depart alive, save you. And we, I and my men, will go to do homage to Arthur and to accept baptism.' Thereupon Peredur said, 'I thank God', said he, 'I have not broken my faith to the woman I love most. I have spoken no word yet to a Christian.' And Peredur remained there that night.

Next day, in the morning, the grey-haired man and his host came to Arthur's court, and did homage to Arthur. Then Arthur caused them to be baptized, and the grey-haired man told Arthur that it was Peredur, W.B. 631 the son of Efrawc, who had sent him and his men there. Then Arthur gave Dyffryn Crwnn to the grey-haired man and his issue, as Peredur had besought him, to hold it under Arthur, and with Arthur's permission the grey-haired man came towards Dyffryn Crwnn.

Next day, in the morning, Peredur came away thence, and travelled through a terrible desert land, void of habitations. And at last he alighted on a mean dwelling; and there Peredur heard that there was a furious snake lying on top of a gold ring, allowing no habitation within seven miles all around him. And Peredur went to fight the snake, and with toil and danger Peredur conquered the snake and killed it, and took the ring himself.

And thus Peredur endured wandering and discomfort and without speaking a word to a Christian at all, until he lost his colour and looks, because of his having left Arthur's court and the woman he loved best.

At last he came to Arthur's court, and nigh unto the court Arthur's bodyguard met him going on a quest, with Cai, the son of Cynyr, in front of them. And none of Arthur's household recognized Peredur or his banners there, but Peredur recognized all of them.

Then Cai asked Peredur who he was, and a second
W.B. 632 time, and a third. Peredur answered naught, and Cai thereupon, through anger because he answered not, struck Peredur with his lance in the thigh to get speech of him. Peredur, nevertheless, spoke no word to Cai, nor did he take vengeance on him therefor.

Gwalchmai then said, 'Between me and God, fair[11] Cai, you have done ill outraging the *macwy* who would not speak to you.' Then Gwalchmai returned to the court with the *macwy*, and desired Gwenhwyfar to cause the *macwy* to be medically attended, though he be dumb. And when Gwalchmai should come back he would pay the cost to Gwenhwyfar; and he informed her it was Cai who had wounded the *macwy*; and Gwenhwyfar caused the *macwy* to be doctored.

When the bodyguard came home from that quest, there was a knight in the meadow near the court seeking a man to tilt with. And the silent knight went to tilt with him, and overthrew him immediately without saying one word to him. And every day till the end of the week a fresh knight came to the meadow calling on a man to tilt with; and the silent knight overthrew them all.

[11] Text has 'irof i a duw gei wynn ys drwc y medreist . . .' The word 'wynn' does not occur in the major texts, but it is a common epithet applied to Cai.

And one day Arthur and his bodyguard were going to church; they saw a *macwy* in the meadow exhibiting his standard of combat. And Arthur said, 'Bring me my horse and armour, and I will go and overthrow yonder *macwy*. . . .'

(The text breaks off here, to be resumed at R.B. p. 221, line 26.)

. . . sitting by the fire, and they ate, and drank, W.B. 637
and talked. Thereupon Peredur became intoxicated, and said to the black man, 'Strange to me is the strength you say you have, and you to have allowed your eye to be pulled out of your head.' 'It is one of my customs,' said the one-eyed black man, 'that whoever mentions to me one word about my eye shall not keep his life, neither for God's sake nor for man's, nor for any good in the world.' 'Lord father,' said the maid, 'since this chief spoke the word a while ago in wantonness and drunkenness, break not the word you spoke.' 'I will not break it,' said he, 'I will spare his life to-night.' And so they passed the night.

And on the morrow, in the morning, the black man rose up and put on his arms, and said to Peredur, 'Rise, man, to meet your death.' 'Black man,' said Peredur, 'if you wish to fight with me, do one of two things: either give me arms, or take off your own arms, and let us go to fight without any arms.' And the black man took off his arms speedily; and threw his arms away from him petulantly, and said to Peredur, 'Take what arms you want, and rise up to fight.' Then the maiden

came with arms to Peredur, and they fought immediately until the black man was forced to seek quarter of Peredur. 'You shall have quarter,' said Peredur, 'if you will say who you are, and say who pulled your eye out of your head.' 'Lord,' said the black man, 'I will
W.B. 638 tell you. In fighting with the Black Dragon of the Carn did I lose my eye. Yonder there is a huge barrow, and it is called the Barrow of Grief. And in the barrow there is a huge carn; and in the carn there is a dragon, and in the tail of the dragon there is a stone. And the virtues of the stone are that whosoever shall take it in his hand shall have in his other hand as much gold as he desires. And in fighting with that dragon, sir, did I lose my eye. And my name is *Du Trahawc*, because I have oppressed everybody who has met me.' 'Tell me how far from here is the barrow of which you speak.' 'I will tell you,' said the black man. 'The day you go hence, you will reach the court of the Sons of Suffering.' 'Why', said Peredur, 'are they called the Sons of Suffering?' 'The *Afanc* of the lake slays them once daily; and therefore are they so called. Thence', said the black man, 'you will reach the court of the Countess of Exploits.' 'What exploits', said Peredur, 'are hers?' 'Three hundred men are there of her bodyguard; and the stranger who comes to her court is informed of the exploits. And the three hundred men sit next to the Countess, so that they may recount their exploits. Thence you will reach the Barrow of Grief; and in that barrow the owners of three hundred pavilions guard the dragon.' 'Yea,'

said Peredur, 'you have told me enough, black man; and since you have been so oppressive, as you yourself say, praiseworthy and proper is it to kill you.' And Peredur immediately slew the black man there. Then the maid spoke to Peredur. 'Ah, sir,' said she, 'if W.B. 639 coming here you were poor, you will go hence rich with the treasure of the black man you have slain. And of the fair maids in the court you have seen you may have the one of them you desire for wife or for mistress.' 'I came not here, lady,' said Peredur, 'with intent to marry. But let the fine young men I have seen in the court attach themselves to the maidens as they will. I myself wish from here neither goods nor anything I have seen.'

Thence Peredur came to the court of the Sons of Suffering. And when he came to the court he saw there women, beautiful and of great courtesy. And they were joyful at Peredur's coming, and talked with him. While they were so occupied, they saw a horse coming in with a saddle on it; and there was a corpse in the saddle; and one of the women arose, took the corpse, and bathed it in tubs of warm water which were below the door. And after that she anointed it with precious ointment; and then the corpse arose as well as it had been at its best to converse with everybody. Nigh unto that, two other men came, two corpses in the same state as the first corpse; and the women healed those two corpses as they had the first, and thereupon Peredur asked why the bodies were thus. And the women told Peredur that there was an *Afanc* which was near to them there; and that it slew them daily.

W.B. 640 So passed they that night. And next day the *mac-wyaid* who had been slain arose and went away. Peredur besought them, for the sake of their sweethearts, to allow him to go with them, and they refused. 'If he should slay you,' said they, 'you have no one who would make you whole; whereas we have.'

Peredur went after them till they vanished from him; and while Peredur was proceeding thus, behold he saw, sitting on the top of a hill, the fairest woman he had ever seen. 'I know your journey and thought,' said she to Peredur; 'you are going to fight the *Afanc*, and the *Afanc* will slay you by strategy, for he perceives everybody who comes to him from the shadow of the stone which is at the entrance to the cave; and nobody sees him until he has slain him. With a stone spear does he slay all who come to him; and if you will give me your faith to love me most of women, I will give you a stone whereby you shall see the *Afanc*, and the *Afanc* shall not see you.' 'I will give it, by my faith,' said Peredur, 'for ever since I saw you, I have loved you. And where, lady, shall I seek you?' 'Ask', said she, 'for the Empress of India.' And then the woman vanished from Peredur after giving the stone into his hand.

And then Peredur travelled on until he came to a fair valley, and there was a river in the valley. And on the borders of the valley was a beautiful, flat, and level wood, and there was many a fair meadow in the valley. And on one side of the river there was a flock of white sheep, and on the other side a flock of black sheep.

W.B. 641 And when one of the black sheep bleated, one of the

white sheep came to them, and became quite black. And when one of the white sheep bleated, one of the black sheep came to them, and it became pure white. And he beheld a tree on the river bank, and one half of the tree was burning to the top, and the other had leaves on it, and its bark was growing beautifully.

And near thereto he saw a *macwy* sitting, with his two grey-hounds, white-breasted and brindled, in one leash, lying near him. And in the wood facing him he heard deer rising. And Peredur saluted the *macwy*, and the *macwy* saluted Peredur. And Peredur saw three roads branching off from the place where the *macwy* was; and Peredur asked where those three roads went to. 'One of them', said the *macwy*, 'goes to my court; and the other of them goes to the city that is near here; and the narrow road which you see there goes to the place where the *Afanc* is. The best thing I can do for you', said the *macwy* to Peredur, 'is one of two things, either to go to my court farther on, where you will obtain happiness, or for you to stay here with me, to see the untired dogs let loose on the tired stags. And when it is time to go to eat my servant will bring here my horse to meet me, and tarry you with me to-night.' 'God reward you,' said Peredur, 'and with your permission, I will go away to where the *Afanc* is.'

And Peredur went onwards, and put the stone in his left hand, and a spear in his right hand. And he came W.B. 642 to the entrance to the cave, and perceived the *Afanc* at once, and thrust it through with his spear, and quickly drew out his sword, and cut off its head.

And when Peredur returned thence, he saw the three men whom the *Afanc* had slain coming to meet him. And those men saluted Peredur, and thanked him for having slain the *Afanc*, and said that there was a prediction that he would slay that Oppression. Then Peredur gave the *Afanc's* head to the youths; and the youths offered Peredur one of their three sisters as a wife to him, and half of their dominions with her. 'I came not here to find a wife,' said Peredur. 'If I wished for a wife, I would desire your sister most.'

And Peredur journeyed on away from there; and Peredur heard a tumult behind him. There was there a handsome man on a large red horse, and red arms upon him, and the knight saluted Peredur in a kindly way, and spake to him thus, 'Lord,' said he, 'to beseech you to take me as a man to you have I come after you.' 'Who are you?' said Peredur. 'An Earl from the East am I, and Etlym of the Red-fire Sword is my name.' 'I marvel', said Peredur, 'why you should offer to be a man to me, rather than I to you, for my dominion is no greater than yours. And since it seems
W.B. 643 good to you, I will take you as a man to me.'

Thereupon Etlym did homage to Peredur; and they went together to the court of the Countess of Exploits. And there was joy at their coming; but they were not permitted to sit save below the Countess' bodyguard; and this, not through disrespect to them, for it was the custom of the court that until it was known if their exploits were greater than those of the bodyguard, they were not allowed to sit except below them. And

the Countess would allow none, not even her bodyguard, to sit at the side of the knight.

Peredur then went to tilt with the three hundred of the Countess' bodyguard, and he overthrew them all, and thereupon Peredur came to the Countess' side. 'I thank God', said the Countess, 'that I have found a servant so brave and so fair as you; since I have not found the man I love most.' 'Ah! good lady,' said Peredur, 'who is the man you love most?' 'I have never seen him,' said she; 'his name is Etlym of the Red Sword.' 'Between me and God,' said Peredur, 'he is a companion of mine, and here he is. For his sake I beat your bodyguard; and he could have done better than myself. As a sign to you thereof[12] I will give you as wife to Etlym of the Red Sword.' And that night they slept together.

And next day, in the morning, Peredur went towards the Barrow of Grief. 'By thy hand and the hand of God,' said Etlym, 'I will go along with you.' And they went together till they saw the three hundred tents. 'Go you', said Peredur to Etlym, 'to the men of the pavilions, and demand that they come to do homage to me.' W.B. 644
And Etlym came to them, and commanded them to come to do homage to his lord. 'Who is your lord?' said they. 'Peredur Paladyr Hir', said he, 'is my lord.' 'Were it the custom or right to slay a messenger, you should not return alive for demanding that kings and earls and barons should do homage to your lord.'

[12] The words 'arwyd ytt ar hynny' are twice repeated in the text.

And then Etlym came and told Peredur of the refusal of the men to do homage to him. Then Peredur went himself to them to tilt with them, if they would not do homage to him freely. And they chose to tilt with Peredur, and Peredur overthrew the owners of a hundred pavilions from among them the first day. And the next day he overthrew as many again; and the owners of the third hundred tents chose to do homage to Peredur. And Peredur asked them what they were doing there. 'To guard a dragon, until it dies, are we here. And then we would fight for the stone that is in the dragon's tail, and the victor among us will take the stone.' Said Peredur, 'I will go to fight the dragon.' 'We will go with you, lord.' 'Come not,' said Peredur; 'should we go there together, I should get none of the fame of killing the dragon.'

And Peredur went himself then, and slew the dragon and brought the stone to Etlym of the Red Sword, and came to the men who owned the pavilions, and said to them, 'Count up your expenses and costs ever since you came here, and I will pay it you, and I will ask of
W.B. 645 you none of your goods, save that you acknowledge yourselves to be men to me.' And as they themselves estimated their costs and expenses Peredur paid them.

Peredur travelled thence to get news about the woman who had given him the stone; and he came to the fairest river valley in the world, and near by the river that was there he saw many mills and several windmills, and numberless tents of various colours and banners. And a handsome auburn-haired man met

him, with the look of a carpenter on him. And Peredur asked him who he was. 'I am a carpenter, head miller of all yonder mills.' 'Can I get a lodging of you this night?' said Peredur, 'and money on loan to buy food and drink for myself and your household, and I will repay it before departing hence.' 'You can get it,' said he.

And then Peredur asked the miller what that mustering was. Said the miller, 'There is one thing: either you have come from far off, or you are mad. The Empress of Corsdinobyl the Great', said the miller, 'is here; and she wants naught but the bravest man and the best knight, for she has no need of goods. She is paying the cost at the tournament of the host that may come here; and because it would not be possible to bring food for such a number of thousands as are in the valley these mills have been built to grind food for them.'

And next day, in the morning, Peredur arose and equipped himself and his horse to go to the tournament. He looked at one of the tents that had a different appearance from any of the others; and there was a maiden leaning out of the window of that pavilion, with a garment of golden brocaded silk on her. And Peredur turned his gaze upon her through love for her beauty, and Peredur remained so until everybody came back from the tournament that night. W.B. 646

Then Peredur came to his lodging, and sought a loan from the miller that night like the night before, and he got it. And his wife was very cross with Peredur.

The second day Peredur arose and came to the place

where he had been the day before; and looked at the maiden he had looked at the day before, until the miller came to him, late in the day, and the miller gave Peredur a considerable blow on the shoulder with the handle of his axe, and said to him, 'Are you mad? If not, do one of two things, either go to the tournament or get away from here.' And then Peredur smiled, and went to the tournament, and as many knights as he met he overthrew them all, and sent the men to the Empress to be baptized, and gave the horses to the miller's wife in payment for the money he had taken on loan. Peredur pursued the tournament until he had finished overthrowing the knights who were there, and as Peredur overthrew them, he sent the men to the Empress to be baptized, and gave the horses that were there to the miller's wife for the money lent.

And then the Empress sent a messenger to Peredur to ask him to come and visit her; and if Peredur would not come of his own free will, to try and bring him against his will. And three times Peredur refused the Empress to come to visit her; and thereupon the Empress commanded a hundred of her *gwyrda* to go and bring him against his will, if he would not come of his
W.B. 647 own free will. And when they tried to take him against his will, Peredur tied tight bonds on all of the hundred men, and threw them into the fosse of one of the mills.

And the Empress asked advice of her head counsellor what she should do on that account. He said to her, 'I will go', said he, 'to him to ask that chief to

come to visit you.' And the head counsellor came to Peredur, and asked him, for the sake of his sweetheart, to visit the Empress. And Peredur went, he and the miller, to the Empress' pavilion, and the moment Peredur entered the pavilion he sat down. And the Empress came to him to sit down there, and they had a short conversation; and Peredur came to his lodging at once by the kind permission of the Empress.

Next day Peredur came to visit the Empress. And that day the Empress had the pavilion prepared in an honourable royal fashion, so that it was not worse to sit in one place than another anywhere inside the tent. Peredur sat that day by the side of the Empress; and they talked sweetly and politely. And while they were thus, they saw, coming in, a big black man with a golden goblet[13] full of wine in his hand. And he bent on his knee in front of the Empress, and put the goblet[13] in her hand, and besought her not to give either the wine or the goblet[14] except to some one who would tilt with him for it. Then the Empress looked at Peredur. 'Why do you look at me, lady?' said Peredur; 'nevertheless, give me the goblet[13] and the wine.' And Peredur drank up the W.B. 648 wine, and gave the goblet to the miller's wife.

And while they were so occupied, they saw coming to them a man who was bigger than the first, and in his hand a dragon's claw in gold, in the shape of a goblet,[13] and the latter full of wine. And he bowed before the Empress, and besought her not to give it to

[13] See note 3, Fragment B. [14] Text reads 'gorwch'.

any one save one who would tilt with him for it. 'Lady,' said Peredur, 'give me that also'; and Peredur took it and drank up the wine, and gave the dragon's claw to the miller's wife.

And while they were so occupied, they saw a big curly red-headed man, who was bigger than either of the two other men, with a goblet of crystal in his hand, full of wine, and he gave it into the Empress' hand, and besought her not to give it to any one save one who would tilt with him for it. And Peredur took it and drank up the wine, and gave the goblet to the miller's wife.

And that night Peredur came to his lodging, and next day he equipped himself with armour and went to tilt with the three men who had brought the three goblets. And Peredur slew all three, and when he had finished slaying all three he came to the pavilion. And then the Empress said to Peredur, 'Peredur fair,' said she, 'remember your faith which you gave me, when I gave you the stone and caused you to slay the *Afanc*.' 'Lady,' said he, 'methinks you speak truth, and I will remember.'

And then he remained with the Empress for fourteen years. And so ended the Progress of Peredur, the son of Efrawc.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE TO GEREINT AND ENID

THERE are two complete texts of Gereint and Enid: one in R.B. pp. 244–95, and one in W.B. cols. 385–451. In addition, there is a third text, hereafter referred to as Text B, in W.B. pp. 204–25, and p. 254, corresponding with R.B. 261, line 19, to end, and W.B. col. 406, line 37 to end; as well as two very short fragments from the same original text (hereafter referred to as Text C). There is very little difference, other than orthographical and philological ones, between the four texts, where they cover each other. These are sufficiently noted in the translation and notes.

The story of Gereint and Enid is the fifth and last of the Arthurian cycle in the Mabinogion. Gereint himself is a semi-historical Welsh figure, of frequent occurrence in legend; and nearly all the characters who appear in the romance are Welsh in origin, and most of them occur in the other stories also. There are many incidental references to Welsh custom, and events like the enclosure of mist are purely Celtic. The 'motif' of the story is also Celtic, and develops the theme which we find in the case of Branwen and Rhiannon, viz. the suffering of women. In Branwen suffering is caused by outside force, in Rhiannon by unjust accusation, in Enid by unjust suspicion. There is, hence, a definite Welsh atmosphere; but, nevertheless, Gereint and Enid is, in the main, simply a Welsh rendition of a tale as it came back to Wales after being subjected to

Norman-French influence. It is told in much greater detail in Chrétien de Troyes; and the Welsh version appears to be derived from the same sources as Chrétien used. But it has not come direct from Chrétien. The Welsh is more concise; it lacks the indecencies and innuendoes of Chrétien; it is purer in thought generally, and, on the whole, is much more skilfully constructed. From the point of view of Welsh characteristics and literature, it is, however, the least interesting of the Welsh Arthurian stories. In parts we find distinct traces of the Welsh directness of diction; but, on the whole, the older dramatic power has been lost. The tale resembles in some ways 'Owein and Lunet'; but it is shorn of a great deal of the charm of the latter. Diction and setting have become formal; and in the use of extravagant adjectives and adverbs, already creeping in in Peredur, Norman-French exaggerations of style have become triumphant. We leave it with the final impression that it marks the last stage in the decay of Welsh romantic literature, and the final triumph of Norman-French formalism over the indigenous literary art. Norman-French influence is apparent throughout. The trapping, the constant presence of tournaments and jousts, much of the type of language (particularly in conversation), and the class of adventures met with by Gereint are not Welsh; and, as in the other stories which betray Norman-French influence, the geographical locale might be anywhere or nowhere, notwithstanding occasional references to Caerlleon and the like.

GEREINT AND ENID

This is how the Story of Gereint, the son of Erbin, is told.[1] R.B. 244

ARTHUR was accustomed to hold court at Caerlleon-on-Usk. And he held it for seven Easters and five Christmases running. And once upon a time he held court there at Whitsuntide, for Caerlleon was the most accessible place in his dominions, both from sea and land. And he mustered around him there nine crowned kings who were men unto him, and along with them earls and barons.[3] For these were guests of his at all special festivals, unless there was great necessity hindering them. W.B. 385

And when he would be at Caerlleon, holding court, thirteen churches would be reserved for the celebration of Mass.[4] They were reserved thus. A church for Arthur and his kings and his guests; a second for Gwenhwyfar and her ladies; a third was for the Steward and suppliants; and a fourth for Odyar[2] the Frank[5] and other officers; and nine other churches were for[6] the nine *Penteulu*[7] and for Gwalchmai chiefly, for he, by reason of the excellence of his military renown and the honour of his lineage, was the chief of the nine *Penteulu*. And there could not be con-

1 Not in W.B. 2 Not in R.B.

3 Cf. the feudal character with Peredur, p. 118.

4 Lit. 'Masses'.

5 Anwyl states that 'franc' here equals 'steward', and not 'Frank'. 6 W.B. 'between'.

7 For 'penteulu' see note 1 to 'Rhonabwy'.

tained in one of the churches more than we have said above.[8]

Glewlwyd Gafaelfawr was his head porter; but he
R.B. 245 did not himself engage in service, except at one of the three principal festivals, but seven men, who were
W.B. 386 under him doing duty, divided the year between them, none other than Grynn . . . and Pennpighon, and Llaes Cymyn, and Gogyfwlch, and Gwrdnei Llygeit Cath, who saw at night as well as in the day. And Drem, the son of Dremhidid, and Clust, the son of Clustfeinydd, who were Arthur's sentries.

And on Whit-Tuesday, as the Emperor sat in the carousal, behold a tall auburn-haired youth came inside, and a coat and surcoat of twilled brocaded silk upon him, and a gold-hilted sword on his neck, and two low shoes of Cordovan leather on his feet. And he came right in front of Arthur. 'Hail to you, lord,' said he. 'God prosper you,' said he, 'and the grace of God be with you; and have you any fresh news?' 'I have, lord,'[1] said he. 'I do not recognize you,' said Arthur. 'It is strange to me you do not recognize me. I, lord, am your forester in the Forest of Dean, and Madawc, the son of Twrgadarn, is my name.' 'Tell your news,' said Arthur. 'I will tell it, lord,' said he. 'I have seen a stag in the forest, the like of which I have never seen.' 'What's the matter with it,' said Arthur, 'that you have never seen the like of it?' 'It is pure white, lord, and it does not walk with one animal,

[8] i.e., the throngs of each at the court were so great that a separate church was necessary for each group.

through arrogance and pride, because of its majesty, and to ask your advice, lord, have I come. What is your advice regarding it?' 'The best thing I can do', W.B. 387
said Arthur, 'is to go to hunt it to-morrow in the youth of the day, and to cause notice to be given to-night to all[9] from the lodgings, and to Ryfuerys (who was Arthur's head huntsman), and to Elifri (who was head *macwy*), and to every one besides.'

Upon that was it settled. And he let the *macwy* go in front of him. And then Gwenhwyfar said to Arthur, R.B. 246
'Lord,' said she, 'will you allow me to go to-morrow to see and listen to the hunting of the stag the *macwy* spoke of?' 'I will permit you gladly,' said Arthur. 'I will go,' said she. And thereupon Gwalchmai said to Arthur, 'Lord,' said he, 'would it not be right for you to allow the one to whom the stag should come in the chase to cut its head off, and give it to any one he wishes, whether his own sweetheart, or the sweetheart of his companion, whether it be a horseman or one on foot it shall come to?' 'I will permit it gladly,' said Arthur, 'and let the Steward be rebuked, if every one be not ready to-morrow to go to hunt.'

And they spent the night with a fair number of songs and entertainment and converse, and service without stint.[10] And when it was time for all of them to go to sleep, they went.

And when day came next day they awoke. And Arthur called his servants who guarded his bed, none other than the four *macwy*. These were they, Cad- W.B. 388

9 W.B. 'let all know to-night'.

10 R.B. 'abundant'.

yrieith, the son of the Porter Gandwy, and Amhren,[11] the son of Bedwyr, and Amhar, the son of Arthur, and Goreu, the son of Custennyn. And these men came to Arthur, and saluted him, and dressed him. And Arthur wondered that Gwenhwyfar did not awake, and did not turn in her bed. And the men desired to wake her. 'Wake her not,' said Arthur, 'since it pleases her to sleep rather than to go to see the hunt.'

And then Arthur set forth; and he heard two horns sounding, one near the lodging of the head huntsman, and the other near the lodging of the head *macwy*. And the full complete muster of the retinue came to Arthur,
R.B. 247 and they proceeded towards the forest. [And through the Usk they came to the forest, and left the high road, and travelled through exposed high land, until they came to the forest.][2]

And after Arthur had gone away from the court, Gwenhwyfar awoke, and called her maids, and dressed herself. 'Maidens,' said she, 'I took leave last night to go to see the hunt. Go, one of you, to the stable, and cause to come such horses as are fitting for women to ride upon.' And one of them went, and found naught in the stable save two horses. And Gwenhwyfar and one of her maidens went on the two horses, and came through the Usk, and kept to the trail and the tracks[2] of the men and the horses.

W.B. 389 And when they were thus proceeding they heard a great vehement noise, and they looked backwards, and they saw a horseman on a hunter-foal of immense size;

[11] W.B. 'Ambren'.

and an auburn-haired *macwy*, young and bare-legged, and of kingly appearance; and a golden-hilted sword on his thigh, and a coat and surcoat of brocaded silk upon him, and two low shoes of Cordovan leather on his feet, and a mantle of blue purple above that, with a golden apple at each corner of it. And his horse walked proudly, quickly, with sprightliness and in harmony.

And he overtook Gwenhwyfar, and greeted her. 'God prosper you, Gereint,' said she; 'I recognized you when I saw you first awhile ago. The grace of God be with you. Why did you not go with your lord to hunt?' 'Because I knew not when he went,' said he. 'I myself wondered', said she, 'that he was able to go without my noticing[1] it.' 'Yes, lady,' said he, 'I also slept so that I knew not when he went.' 'And the companion', said she, 'whose company is most pleasing to me in the whole dominion is you, oh young man, and it is possible that I shall be as much diverted by the hunt as they, because we shall hear the horns when they R.B. 248
are sounded, and we shall hear the dogs when let go, and when they begin to bay.' And they came to the edge of the forest, and there they stood. 'We shall hear from here', said she, 'when the dogs are let loose.'

And thereupon they heard a noise. And they looked in the direction of the noise, and they saw a dwarf W.B. 390
riding upon a large, wide-nostrilled, spirited, strong and valiant horse. And in the dwarf's hand was a whip. And near the dwarf they saw a lady on a beautiful white horse, whose pace was spirited but docile. And upon her a garment of golden brocaded silk. And near

her a horseman on a huge war-horse of powerful draught,[12] and heavy shining armour upon him and upon his horse. And they were certain that they had never seen man and horse and armour more marvellous in size than they. And they were all close together.[13] 'Gereint,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'are you acquainted with yonder big rider?' 'I am not acquainted with him,' said he, 'and yonder huge foreign armour does not allow me to see either his face or appearance.' 'Go, maiden,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'and ask the dwarf who the rider is.'

The maiden went to meet the dwarf, and the dwarf awaited the maiden, when he saw her coming to him. And the maiden asked the dwarf, 'Who is the rider?' said she. 'I will not tell it to you,' said he. 'Since your courtesy is so poor', said she, 'as not to tell me, I will ask him himself.' 'You shall not ask him, by my faith,' said he. 'Why?' said she. 'Because you are not of the rank of a person who is fitting to speak with my lord.' Thereupon the maiden turned the head of her horse towards the rider. Then the dwarf struck her with
W.B. 391 the whip that was in his hand across her face and her
R.B. 249 eyes, until the blood streamed forth. And the maiden, because of the pain from the blow, came back to

[12] 'tomlyt'. Anwyl 'muddy'; Morris-Jones 'dungy'; deriving it from 'tom', 'dirt', and llyd, 'covered with'. 'Cassec tom' in O.W. meant a 'draught-mare'. lyd, llydw, lledw = abundant. The word 'tom', in the sense of 'draught', is of frequent occurrence in the Ancient Laws. It possibly acquired this meaning from the character of the work of a draught-horse.

[13] Lit., 'and every one close to the other'.

Gwenhwyfar to complain of the pain. 'Most evilly', said Gereint, 'has the dwarf treated you. I will go', said Gereint, 'to know who the rider is.' 'Go,' said Gwynhwyfar.

Gereint came to the dwarf. 'Who is yonder rider?' said Gereint.[14] 'I will not tell it to you,' said the dwarf. 'I will ask the rider himself,' said he. 'You shall not ask him, by my faith,' said the dwarf; 'you are not of such rank as to entitle you to speak with my lord.' Said Gereint, 'I have conversed with a man as good as your lord.' And he turned his horse's head towards the rider. Thereupon the dwarf[14] overtook him, and struck him in the place he had struck the maiden, till the blood stained the mantle that was on Gereint. Then Gereint put his hand on the hilt of his sword, and he took counsel in his mind, and he considered that it would be no vengeance for him to slay the dwarf,[15] and the armed knight getting him cheaply, and he without arms. He came back to the place where Gwenhwyfar was. 'Wisely and prudently have you acted,' said she. 'Lady,' said he, 'with your permission, I will yet follow him; and he will come at length to a dwelling where I may get armour, either on loan or on a pledge, wherewith I may test the knight.' 'Go,' said she, 'and press not upon him until you get good armour, and great anxiety will I have concerning you,' said she, 'until I get tidings of you.' 'If I shall be alive,' said W.B. 392

[14] W.B. 'he'.

[15] As Loth points out, chivalric honour did not allow a knight to touch an inferior, save in self-defence.

he, 'at nones to-morrow evening you shall have news, if I escape.' And thereupon he set forth.

And they[16] travelled along the road below the court in Caerlleon, and passed through the ford on the Usk;
R.B. 250 and they travelled through a fair, exposed,[17] high plain until they came to a fortified town. And above the town they saw a fort and castle. And they came to the top of the town. And while the knight was walking through the town, the household of every house arose to greet him and welcome him. And when Gereint came to the town, he looked into every house to try and recognize some one of those whom he saw. And he recognized nobody, and nobody him, from whom he could have the favour of arms, either on loan or on pledge. And he saw every house full of men and arms and horses, and a polishing of shields, and a burnishing of swords, and a washing of armour, and a shoeing of horses. And the rider and the lady rider and the dwarf proceeded to the castle that was in the town. And every one from the castle was rejoiced at seeing them, and on the battlements and the gates in every direction they bent their necks low in welcoming them and in rejoicing at their coming.

Gereint stood to see whether he would stay any time in the castle; and when he knew for certain he would tarry there, he looked around; and a little way from the town he saw an old court in ruins, with a hall in it in a dilapidated state. And as he recognized no one in the

[16] i.e. the knight and the dwarf.

[17] 'Erdrym'. Bodfan Anwyl gives 'exposed'; Loth 'fertile'.

town, he went to the old court. And when he came thence to the court, he saw absolutely nothing save an W.B. 393
upper chamber which he saw, and a bridge of marble leading downwards[2] from the upper chamber. And on the bridge he saw a grey-haired man sitting, with old tattered clothes upon him. Gereint looked at him steadfastly for some time, and the grey-haired man said to him, 'Ah! *macwy*,' said he, 'what are you thinking about?' 'I am thinking', said he, 'that I know not whither I may go to-night.' 'Will you come hither, sir,' said he, 'and you shall have the best that may be got for you?' ['I will go,' said he, 'and God reward you.'][2]

He came forward, and the grey-haired man pro- R.B. 251
ceeded in front of him to the hall. And he dismounted in the hall, and left his horse there, and came straightway to the upper chamber, he and the grey-haired man. And in the upper chamber he saw an elderly woman sitting on a cushion, with old tattered clothes of brocaded silk upon her, and when she had been in the fullness of her youth, he thought that no one had seen a lady more fair than she; and a maiden beside her with a shirt and over-garment, old and beginning to fall into pieces upon her. And he was certain that he had never seen a maid more richly endowed with beauty, grace, and dignity than she.

And the grey-haired man said to the maiden, 'There is no groom for this *macwy's*[18] horse to-night save you.' 'The best service I am capable of,' said she, 'will I do both to him and to his horse.' And the maid took off

[18] W.B. 'knight's' added.

the *macwy's* shoes, and then supplied the horse with
W.B. 394 hay and corn. And she proceeded to the hall as before, and returned to the upper chamber. And then the grey-haired man said to the maiden, 'Go to the town,' said he, 'and the best bargain[19] you can make for food and drink, cause it to be brought here.' 'I will do so gladly, lord,' said she. And the maiden came to the town. And they talked while the maiden was in the town. And immediately, behold the maiden came and a servant with her, and a jar on his back full of excellent mead, and a quarter of a young ox. And in the maiden's two hands there was a portion of white bread and one loaf of manchet[20] bread in her over-garment. And she came to the upper chamber. 'I could not', said she, 'make a better bargain than this, nor could I get credit for anything better than this.' 'It is good enough,' said Gereint; and they caused the meat to be boiled.

And when their food was ready, they went to sit down in this manner. Gereint sat between the grey-
R.B. 252 haired man and his wife, and the maiden waited upon them, and they ate and drank. And when they had finished eating, Gereint engaged in conversation with the grey-haired man, and asked him if he was the first to own the court they were in. 'I indeed built it,' said he, 'and I used to own the fortified town and the

[19] 'trawsgwyd'. Morris-Jones gives 'transaction'.

[20] R.B. 'un coesset'. W.B. 'ouuyt (o fwyd) coesset'. 'Coesset' = manchet, a small loaf of fine bread. Anwyl would read 'cosyn' = cheese.

castle which you have seen.' 'Oh, sir,' said Gereint, 'why did you lose it?' 'I lost', said he, 'a great earldom along with it, and this is why I lost it. I had a nephew, my brother's son, and his dominion did I take into my own possession, and when strength came to him, he claimed his dominion. I kept the dominion W.B. 395
from him. He waged war against me, and he conquered[21] all that was in my possession.'

'Ah, *gwrda*,' said Gereint, 'will you tell me, what is the reason of the coming of the knight[22] who came to the town a while ago with a lady and a dwarf? And why are there the preparations which I saw in the making ready of arms?' 'I will tell you,' said he. 'The preparations are for to-morrow's sport which the young Earl is going to have. It will be thus. Two forks will be put in the meadow that is there, and on the two forks a silver rod, and a falcon will be placed upon the rod, and there will be a tournament for the falcon. And the throng you saw in the whole town of men and horses and arms will come to the tournament, and the lady he loves best will come with every man, and no man may joust for the falcon unless the lady he loves best be with him. And the knight you saw has won the falcon two years, and should he get it the third year, it will be sent to him every year thereafter, and he will not himself come here. And the Knight of the Falcon will the knight[23] be called thenceforth.'

[21] 'chynuydu'. Anwyl 'ruled over'.
[22] Lit. 'what coming was that of the knight?'
[23] R.B. has 'march' by error for 'marchawc'.

'Ah, *gwrda*,' said Gereint, 'what is your advice to
R.B. 253 me concerning that knight because of the insult I received from the dwarf, and the maiden of Gwenhwyfar, Arthur's wife, received?' And Gereint told the grey-haired man the story of the insult. 'It is not easy for me to be able[2] to advise you since there is neither lady nor
W.B. 396 maid for you to champion,[24] so that you could go to tilt with him. I have arms here, the which you could have; and my horse, should you think it better than your own.' 'Ah, *gwrda*,' said he, 'God reward you. My own horse, to which I am accustomed, is good enough for me with your arms; and should you, *gwrda*, allow me to champion yonder maiden, who is your daughter, at the appointed time to-morrow, and should I escape from the tournament, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love as long as I live. If I should not escape, the maiden will be as chaste as before.' 'I will do so gladly,' said the grey-haired man, 'and since you are settling on this plan, it is necessary that your horse and arms should be ready by day-time to-morrow; for then will the Knight of the Falcon proclaim thus. He will ask the lady he loves best to take the falcon, "for it best befits you. You have had it", will he say, "last year and for two years, and should any one forbid it to you to-day through might, I will defend it for you."

[24] 'ymardelw' (reflexive form of 'arddelw'). 'Arddelw' in O.W. = (*a*) English 'warranty' or 'avouchment'; therefore, an 'arddelwr' was one who avouched for or championed another. (*b*) 'advocaria' or 'commendation'; therefore 'arddelwr' meant one in commendation to another. The word has many derivative meanings in Welsh, e.g., to represent; to ally.

'And therefore', said the grey-haired man, 'it is necessary for you to be there when day comes, and we,[25] the three of us, will be with you.' And they decided upon that. And immediately, it being night, they went to sleep; and they arose before day, and dressed themselves.

And when it was day they all four were standing on the embankment of the meadow.[2] And then the Knight of the Falcon made proclamation, and asked his lady-love to fetch the falcon. 'Fetch it not,' said Gereint; W.B. 397
'there is a maiden here who is fairer and more beautiful R.B. 254
and more nobly-born[2] than you, and more worthy of it.'
'If you maintain that falcon to be hers, come forward to tilt with me.' Gereint came forward to the end of the meadow, furnished with a horse, and armour, heavy, rusty, mean, and strange on himself and his horse. And they charged, and they broke a set of lances, and they broke a second, and they broke a third set, and so on, one after the other, and they broke them as they were brought to them. And when the Earl and his retinue saw the Knight of the Falcon valiant, a shout of joy and rapture did he and his retinue give vent to. And sad were the grey-haired man and his wife and his daughter.

And the grey-haired man served Gereint with lances as they broke, and the dwarf served the Knight of the Falcon. And then the grey-haired man came to Gereint. 'Ah, sir,' said he, 'see here the lance that was in my hand the day I was honoured as an honourable knight; and from then till to-day[26] I have not

[25] W.B. 'I'. [26] W.B. 'on'.

broken it, and there is an excellent point to it, for not a lance prevails with you.' Gereint took the lance with thanks to the grey-haired man. Thereupon, behold the dwarf came with a lance to his lord. ' See here a lance for you not worse,' said the dwarf, ' and bear in mind no knight ever withstood you so long as this one is standing (against you).'[27] ' Between me and God,'
W.B. 398 said Gereint, ' unless death takes me away quickly, he shall not be any better for your help.' And from afar off from him, Gereint spurred his horse, and with a warning, rushed at him, and struck him a poignant, terrible severe blow in the strong part of the shield, until the shield was cloven, and until his armour was broken in the direction of the blow, and until the girths
R.B. 255 broke, and until he and his saddle were on the ground over the horse's crupper. And Gereint quickly dismounted, and was angry, and he drew his sword, and rushed at him wrathfully. The knight arose and drew another sword against Gereint; and they exchanged blows with their swords on foot until the arms of both of them were shivered to pieces, and until sweat and blood dragged the light out of their eyes. And when Gereint was most valiant, the grey-haired man and his wife and his daughter rejoiced, and when the knight was most valiant, the Earl and his party rejoiced. And when the grey-haired man saw Gereint had received a very severe blow, he came near him quickly, and said to him, ' Sir,' said he, ' remember the insult you received from the dwarf. Was it not to avenge the

[27] Lit. ' is standing ', i.e. ' is standing fast ' (against you).

insult to you that you came here, and the insult to Gwenhwyfar, Arthur's wife?'

Remembrance of[2] what the man said to him came to Gereint, and he called his strength to him, and raised his sword on high, and struck the knight on the top of his head, until the whole of the armour of his head W.B. 399 was broken, and until all the flesh and skin was cut through to the skull[1] until he wounded him to the bone.

And thereupon the knight fell on his knees, and threw his sword from his hand, and sought mercy of Gereint. 'High time', said he 'is it for my evil arrogance and pride to allow me to seek quarter; and should I not have respite to commit myself to God because of my sins, and to speak to a priest, I shall not have good of your quarter to me.' 'I will grant you quarter', said Gereint,[14] 'on this (condition), that you go to Gwenhwyfar, Arthur's wife, to make atonement to her for the insult to her maiden by your dwarf. Enough for me what I have done to you for the insult I received from you and your dwarf. Dismount not from when you go hence, until, in the presence of Gwenhwyfar, right is R.B. 256 done to her as it is adjudged in Arthur's court.' 'I will do that gladly, and who are you?' said he. 'I am Gereint, the son of Erbin, and tell me who you are.' 'I am Edyrn, the son of Nudd.' And then he was lifted on his horse, and he came straightway to Arthur's court, and the lady he loved most in front and the dwarf, and they lamented greatly. Up to this point is his story related.[1]

And then the young[28] Earl and his retinue came to the place[1] where Gereint was, and saluted him, and invited him with him to the castle. 'I do not wish to,'
W.B. 400 said Gereint. 'Where I was last night will I go to-night.' 'Since you accept not the invitation to you,[29] you shall have abundance of what I can prepare for you in the place you were last night, and I will have a bath prepared for you to cast aside your weariness and fatigue from upon you.' 'God reward you,' said Gereint, 'and I will go to my lodging.' And Gereint came thus, and the Earl Ynywl and his wife and his daughter.

And when they came to the upper chamber, the young Earl's pages of the chamber, with their service, had come to the court, and had fitted out all the houses, and supplied them with straw and fire, and, after a short interval, the bath was ready. And Gereint went there, and his head was washed.

And thereupon the young Earl came, himself the fortieth of honourable knights from among his own men and those invited for the tournament. And then he came from the bath, and the Earl asked him to go to the hall to eat. 'Where is the Earl Ynywl,' said he, 'and his wife and his daughter?' 'They are in yonder upper chamber,' said the earl's groom of the chamber, 'putting on the clothes the earl caused to be brought for them.' 'Let not the maiden,' said he, 'wear aught but the shirt and overall until she come to Arthur's court to wear what Gwenhwyfar shall wish to dress her in.' And the maiden did not dress herself.

[28] R.B. 'little'. [29] W.B. 'now'.

And then every one of them came to the hall, and R.B. 257
they washed and went to sit down and to eat. This is
how they sat. On one side of Gereint sat the young
Earl, and beyond him the Earl Ynywl; and on the W.B. 401
other side of Gereint were the maiden and her mother.
And thereafter, everybody as their rank gave them pre-
cedence. And they ate, and service without stint and
plenty of diverse dishes did they obtain. And they
talked, that is the Earl invited Gereint next day. 'I
will not,' said Gereint. 'Between me and God, I will
go to Arthur's court with this maiden to-morrow; and
there is enough for me so long as the Earl Ynywl is poor
and in trouble. And chiefly will I go to seek to add to
the means of his subsistence.' 'Ah, sir,' said the young
Earl, 'not through my fault is Ynywl without domi-
nions.' 'By my faith,' said Gereint, 'he will not be
without his dominions unless sudden death takes me.'
'Ah, sir,' said he, 'concerning the discord there is
between me and Ynywl, I will do according to your
advice gladly, since you are impartial on (the question
of) right between us.' 'I do not ask you', said Gereint,
'to give him anything save what is due to him and
damages from when he lost his dominions till to-day.'
'And I will do that gladly, for your sake,' said he. 'Yea,'
said Gereint, 'let whoever may be here, who should be
a man to Ynywl, do homage to him at once.' And all the
men did so. And they abided upon that peace. And his
castle and town and dominions were given to Ynywl, and
all he had lost; he obtained even the very least jewel.[30]

[30] W.B. 'up to the smallest jewel he had lost'.

W.B. 402 And thereupon Ynywl said to Gereint, 'Sir,' said he, 'the maid whom you championed the day[31] the tournament took place is ready to do your will. Be-
R.B. 258 hold her in your power.' 'I wish nothing,' said he, 'but that the maid be as she is, until she comes to Arthur's court. And I will that Arthur and Gwenhwyfar should have the giving[32] of the maiden.' And next day they set out straightway for Arthur's court. Thus far the adventure of Gereint.

Here is now how Arthur hunted the stag. He distributed the men and dogs in their positions in the hunt, and let loose the dogs upon it, and the last dog that was unleashed on it was Arthur's favourite dog. Its name was Cafall. And he outpaced all the dogs, and made the stag turn. And at the second turn, the stag came to Arthur's place in the hunt. And Arthur encountered it, and before any one could slay it, Arthur had struck its head off, and then the slaying horn was sounded, and everybody collected there together.

And Cadyrieith came to Arthur, and said to him. 'Lord,' said he, 'Gwenhwyfar is yonder without any one with her save one maiden.' 'Order Gildas, the son of Caw,' said Arthur, 'and all the scholars of the court to proceed with Gwenhwyfar towards the court.'[33] And that they did.

And thereupon they all proceeded, and engaged in

[31] R.B. 'when'.

[32] i.e., according to old Welsh custom, the formal bestowal.

[33] An illustration of old custom. Gwenhwyfar had offended against Court etiquette in going about practically unattended, and was sent back to court with a proper retinue.

conversation about whom the head of the stag should be given to. One desired to give it to the lady he loved most, and another to the lady he loved most. And all of the bodyguard and the knights contended bitterly about the head. And thus they came to the court together.[1] W.B. 403

And when Arthur and Gwenhwyfar heard them contending about the head, Gwenhwyfar said to Arthur, 'Lord,' said she, 'this is my advice concerning the stag's head, that it be not given until Gereint, the son of Erbin, comes from the quest he has gone upon.' And Gwenhwyfar told Arthur the purpose of the quest. 'Let that be done gladly,' said Arthur. And on that it was decided. R.B. 259

And the next day Gwenhwyfar caused watchmen to be placed on the fort for Gereint's coming. And after midday they saw a hunchback of a [34] small person on a horse. And behind him a lady or a maiden, so they thought, upon a horse. And behind her, a big knight, stooping, with his head bent and very sad, and battered wretched armour upon him. And before they came near the gate, one of the watchmen came to the place[1] where Gwenhwyfar was, and told her the kind of persons they had seen, and the kind of appearance that was upon them. 'I know not', said he, 'who they are.' 'I know it,' said Gwenhwyfar; 'that is the knight after whom Gereint went. And methinks it is not of his own free will that he comes. [Gereint has overtaken him, and][35] has avenged the insult to the maiden at the very least.' W.B. 404

34 Anwyl, 'unshapely'.

35 W.B. 'if Gereint has overtaken him, he . . . '

And thereupon, behold the gate-keeper came to the place where Gwenhwyfar was. 'Lady,' said he, 'there is a knight at the gate, and never saw I a person with so pitiful an appearance to look upon as he. Battered wretched armour is upon him, and the colour of his blood upon it is greater than its own colour.' 'And do you know who he is?' said she. 'I do know,' he said; 'he says he is Edyrn,[36] the son of Nudd, but I don't know him myself.'

And then Gwenhwyfar came to the gate to meet him, and he came inside. And Gwenhwyfar felt compassion at seeing the look she saw upon him, were it not that he allowed with him the dwarf, so discourteous as he was. Thereupon Edyrn greeted Gwenhwyfar. 'God prosper you,' said she. 'Lady,' said he, 'salutation unto you from Gereint, the son of Erbin, the best and bravest youth.' 'Did he meet you?' said she. 'He
R.B. 260 did,' said he, 'and not to my advantage, and that was not because of him, lady, but because of myself. Salutation to you from Gereint, and with the salutation, he has compelled me to come here to do your will for the affront to your maiden by the dwarf. He forgives me the affront to himself for what he did on me, since he thinks I have been in peril of my life, and he has placed on me the heavy-hard, manly and soldierly necessity
W.B. 405 of coming here to do right[1] to you, lady.' 'Oh, man, where did he overtake you?' 'In the place where we were sporting and contending for the falcon, in the town which is now called Cardiff. And there was no

[36] W.B. 'Edwin'.

retinue along with him, save three persons, of a poverty-stricken and tattered appearance; none other than an aged greyhaired man, an elderly woman, and a handsome young woman, with old, tattered clothes upon them. And to champion[24] the love of the maiden did Gereint take part in the tournament for the falcon. And he said that that maiden was more deserving of the falcon than this maid who was with me. And for that reason we jousted. And as you see, lady, he left me.' 'Ah man,' said she, 'when do you think Gereint will come here?' 'To-morrow, lady, I think he will come, and the maiden.'

And thereupon Arthur came to him, and he saluted Arthur. 'God prosper you,' said Arthur.[2] And Arthur looked at him a long time, and was amazed at seeing him in such a state. And as he thought he recognized him, he asked him, 'Are you Edyrn, the son of Nudd?' 'I am, lord,' said he, 'I have met with severe affliction and unbearable wounds'; and he told Arthur all his misfortune. 'Yes,' said Arthur, 'it is fitting that Gwenhwyfar should feel pity towards you from what I hear.' 'The mercy you will, lord,' said she, 'will I W.B. 406
do with him, since my being subjected to shame is as R.B. 261
much a shame to you, lord, as if it were to yourself.'

'This is the best thing in regard thereto,' said Arthur, 'to allow this man to be doctored until it be known if he will live. And should he live, he must do right as the best men of the court shall judge. Let sureties be taken therefor. Should he die, the death of such a youth as Edyrn would be too much for an insult to a maiden.'

'That pleases me,' said Gwenhwyfar. And thereupon Arthur stood as surety[37] for him; and Caradawg, the son of Llyr, and Gwallawg, the son of Llennawg, and Owein,[38] the son of Nudd, and Gwalchmai, and enough therefor. And Arthur caused Morgan Tud to be called to him; the chief doctor was he. 'Take Edyrn, the son of Nudd, to you; and cause a chamber to be prepared for him. And attend him, as well as you would me, should I be wounded, and let none go to the chamber to disturb him, save yourself and your pupils to attend to him medically.' 'I will do so, gladly, lord,' said Morgan Tud. And thereupon the Steward
B. 204 said, 'Where, lord, is it right to entrust the maiden?' 'To Gwenhwyfar and her handmaidens,' said he. And the Steward entrusted her. Their story thus far.

W.B. 407 Next day Gereint came towards the court; and there were watchmen on the fort (set) by Gwenhwyfar, lest he should come without notice. And a watchman came to the place[1] where Gwenhwyfar was. 'Lady,' said he, 'methinks I see Gereint and the maiden with him, and he is on horseback, clothed as a footman. But the maiden I see is all in white, and something like a linen dress I see upon her.' 'Prepare yourselves, all, our women,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'and come to meet Gereint to welcome him, and to be glad at his coming.' And

37 'gorfodog' (yn oruodawc), the surety to abide law. 'Ueicheu' (pl. of 'mach') used above=sureties generally.

38 Owein, the son of Nudd (otherwise unknown to Welsh legend) is probably an error for Gwynn ap Nudd.

Gwenhwyfar came to meet Gereint and the maiden; R.B. 262
and when Gereint came to the place[1] where Gwenhwyfar was, he greeted her. 'God prosper you,' said she, 'welcome be you. A journey, fruitful, talented, prosperous, and full of fame have you had, and God reward you', said she,[39] 'for having had right done to me so superbly as you have done.' 'Lady,' said he, 'I could wish to cause right to be done to you according to your will. And, behold, the maiden through whom you obtained your clearance from reproach.'[40] 'Yes,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'the grace of God be with her, and it is not wrong of me[41] to be glad to see her.'

They came inside and dismounted, and Gereint went to the place[1] where Arthur was,[42] and greeted him. 'God prosper you,' said Arthur, 'and the grace of God be with you, and inasmuch as Edyrn, the son of Nudd, met with his suffering and wounds through you, a prosperous journey have you had.' 'I am not responsible for that,' said Gereint, 'but the arrogance of Edyrn, the son of Nudd,[39] himself is, that would not W.B. 408
let me approach him. I would not part from him until I knew who he was, and until the one had conquered the other.' 'Ah man,' said Arthur, 'where is the

[39] Not in Text B.

[40] Both R.B. and the major text of W.B. read 'a llyma y uorwyn y keueist ti dy warthrud oe hachaus'='And behold the maiden on whose account you got your shame'. Text B, however, reads, 'a llyma y uorwyn y keueist ti dy diwarthrudyaw oe hachaus'. This text appears the correct version. The Queen had suffered no disgrace from Enid. Enid was the means whereby Gereint obtained revenge on Edyrn for his insult to Gwenhwyfar.

[41] Text B only.

[42] Text B, 'to visit Arthur'.

maiden I heard you were champion of?' 'She has gone[43] with Gwenhwyfar to[44] her chamber.'

And then Arthur came to see the maiden. And Arthur and his companions and everybody from the whole court were rejoiced to see the maiden. And all of them were certain that had the apparel of the maid been comparable[45] to her features, they had never seen a maid[46] more fair than she. And Arthur became the giver[32] of the maiden to Gereint; and the bond[47] that is made between two persons was made between Gereint and the maid. And the maiden was given the choice of all Gwenhwyfar's clothes, and every one who saw the maid in that dress saw a beautiful[39] and lovely look upon her.

And that day and that night they passed in an abundance of song,[48] and plenty of gifts, and lots of[2]
R.B. 263 wines, and hosts of games. And when it was time to go to sleep, they went. And in the chamber where was Arthur's and Gwenhwyfar's bed, a bed was made for
B. 205 Gereint and Enid. And that night did they sleep together first. And next day Arthur satisfied the suitors on Gereint's behalf with gifts without stint.

And the maiden became accustomed to the court; and companions were brought to her of men and women, so that no maiden in the Isle of Britain was
W.B. 409 more spoken of than was she.

[43] Text B, 'is'. [44] Text B, 'in'.

[45] Text B, 'equal'. [46] R.B. and W.B. 'one'.

[47] This refers to the 'agweddi', or dowry promised by the bridegroom.

[48] Text B, 'song and diversion'.

And then Gwenhwyfar said, 'Rightly did I hit the mark,' said she, 'about the head of the stag, that it should be given to no one until Gereint should come. Behold a proper place for giving it; to Enid, the daughter of Ynywl, the most famous maiden. I do not think any one will refuse it her, since there is between her and every one nothing but love and fellowship.' Every one praised this, and Arthur as well. And the stag's head was given to Enid; and from that time onward her fame multiplied, and her companions thereafter were greater than before.

And thereafter Gereint loved the tournament and hard contests, and from all he came victorious. And a year, and two, and three continued he thus until his renown had flown over the face of the kingdom.

And once upon a time Arthur was holding his court in Caerlleon on Usk at Whitsuntide. Behold there came to him wise and prudent messengers, full of learning and skilled in speech, and they greeted Arthur.

'God prosper you,' said Arthur, 'and the grace of God be with you. And from what place do you come?' 'We come, lord,' said they, 'from Cornwall. And we are messengers to you[41] from Erbin, the son of Custennin, your uncle, [and to you we bring our message][39] and his salutation to you, like as an uncle should salute his nephew and as a man should salute his lord. R.B. 264
And to inform you[39] that he is growing old and feeble,[39] and approaching unto old age. And his neighbouring W.B. 410
owners, through the knowledge thereof, encroach upon

his boundaries,[49] and desire his land and dominions. And Erbin[50] begs you, lord, to let Gereint, his son, go to him[39] to guard his dominions and to know its boundaries; and he says that it is better for him to spend the flower of his youth and his prime in maintaining his own boundaries rather than in useless tournaments, though he may get renown in them.' 'Yes,' said Arthur, 'go and disarray yourselves, and take your food, and cast off the weariness from upon you, and ere you go away, you shall have an answer.'

And they went to eat;[51] and thereupon Arthur thought that it was not easy for him to let Gereint leave him, nor the same court as himself, nor was it easy or fair for him to hinder his nephew[52] maintaining[41] his dominions and guarding his boundaries, since his father could not maintain them. Not less sad was the grief of Gwenhwyfar, nor her longing and that of all the ladies and all the maidens, through fear[39] lest
B. 206 Enid[53] should go away from them.

That day and that night they passed in abundance of all things. And Arthur showed Gereint the purpose of the message, and the coming of the messengers from Cornwall to him there. 'Yes,' said Gereint, 'whether there come gain or loss to me therefrom, lord, I will do what you will in regard to that message.' 'Behold,
W.B. 411 my advice to you thereon,' said Arthur. 'However

[49] 'camderwynnu'. Anwyl, 'getting angry'. Really='camterfynu', as translated.

[50] R.B. and W.B. 'he'. [51] Text B, 'they did so'.

[52] R.B. and W.B. 'that his nephew should be guarding'.

[53] R.B. and W.B. 'the maiden'.

grievous at your going I may be, go you should to dwell in your dominions, and to guard your boundaries. Take with you the retinue you wish, those you love most from among my faithful ones as an escort for yourself, and your own friends and fellow-knights.' 'God R.B. 265
reward you; that will I do,' [said Gereint. 'What murmuring', said Gwenhwyfar, 'do I hear among you? Is it about an escort for Gereint to his own land?' 'Yes,' said Arthur.][39] 'I must needs think', said Gwenhwyfar,[54] 'about an escort and supplies for the lady who is with me.' 'You will do right,' said Arthur.

And they went to sleep that night; and next day the messengers were allowed to depart, and they told them that Gereint would follow after them. The third day thereafter Gereint set out.

This is the retinue that went with him: Gwalchmai, the son of Gwyar,[39] and Riogoned,[55] the son of the King of Ireland, and Ondyaw,[56] the son of the Duke of Burgundy, Gwilym, the son of the Ruler of France, Howel, the son of Emyr of Brittany, Elifri Anawcyrdd, Gwynn, the son of Tringad, Goreu, the son of Custennin, Gweir Gwrhyd Fawr, Garannaw,[57] the son of Golithmer,[58] Peredur, the son of Efrawg, Gwynnllogell, judges of Arthur's court, Dyfyr, the son of Alun Dyfed, Gwrei Gwalstawd Ieithoedd, Bedwyr, the son of Bedrawd, Cadwry,[59] the son of Gwyron, Cai, the son of Cynyr, Odyar the Frank, W.B. 412

54 R.B. and W.B. 'she'.
55 Text B, 'Rioganed'.
56 Text B, 'Ondryaw'.
57 Text B, 'Garanhon'.
58 Text B, 'Glythmyr'.
59 R.B. 'Hadwry'.

steward of Arthur's court, [and Edyrn, the son of Nudd. Gereint said, 'I hear he is well enough to ride; I would like him to come with me.'][60] 'Yea,' said Arthur, 'it is not seemly for you to take that man with you, even though he be well, until peace has been made between him and Gwenhwyfar.' 'Maybe Gwenhwyfar will permit him to go with me upon sureties.' 'If she permits him, let her permit him freely[2] without sureties, since enough affliction and grief have befallen the man for the insult to the maid by the dwarf.' 'Yes,' said Gwenhwyfar, 'whatever you and Gereint consider right to do, I will do it gladly, lord.' And thereupon she permitted Edyrn to go free.

R.B. 266 And a sufficiency thereof went as an escort with Gereint. And they departed, and[39] a fairer host than any one had ever seen proceeded[39] towards the Severn; and on the other side[61] of the Severn were the best men of Erbin, the son of Custennin, and his foster-father in front of them, to welcome Gereint gladly. And many ladies of the court from his mother to meet

B. 207 Enid, the daughter of Ynywl, his wife.[62] And great was the jubilation and rejoicing felt by every one of the court, and of the whole dominions, at the coming of Gereint, because of the greatness of their love towards him, and because of the greatness of the fame he had acquired[63] since he had gone away from them, and

[60] R.B. 'And Edern, the son of Nudd,' said Gereint, 'who, I hear, can ride, I will take with me'.

[61] Text B, 'bank'.

[62] Text B, 'the wife of Gereint'.

[63] Text B, 'they had heard of'.

because he had decided[64] to come[2] to rule over his own dominions and preserve his boundaries. W.B. 413

And they came to the court, and there was in the court for them[65] abundant proud provision of all kinds of gifts and a sufficiency of wines, and service without stint, and many kinds of songs and sports. And in honour of Gereint all the *gwyrda* of the dominions were invited that night to meet Gereint;[39] and that day and that night they passed in the moderation of ease.

And in the youth of the day next day, Erbin rose up and summoned Gereint to him, and the best men who had come in his escort. And he said to Gereint, 'A man heavy with age am I,' said he, 'and so long as I was able to maintain my dominion for you and for me, I maintained it. You are a young man; you are in the flower of your prime and youth. Maintain now your dominions.' 'Yea,' said Gereint, 'with my consent you would not give the power over your dominions into my hand at present, and you would not take me yet from Arthur's court.' 'Into your hand I will give them now. Receive also[39] to-day the homage of your men.'

And then said Gwalchmai, 'It is more fitting for you to-day to satisfy petitioners. And to-morrow to receive R.B. 267
the homage of your dominions.' And then the petitioners were summoned to one place. And then[39] Cadyrieith came to them to examine their claims, and to ask them all[39] what they sought. [And Arthur's bodyguard commenced the giving; and immediately the men of Cornwall came, and they made gifts. And it was not W.B. 414

[64] Text B, 'he was coming'. [65] Text B, 'there'.

long that they were engaged in giving by reason of the greatness of the eagerness of them all to give. And of those who came there to ask for a boon, none departed thence save with what he wanted.][66] And that day and that night they passed in the moderation of ease.

And the next day, in the youth of the day, Erbin requested Gereint to send messengers to the men to ask if it were convenient to them for him to come to receive homage, and if they had either anger or damage from any cause, which they should place before him. [Thereupon Gereint dispatched messengers to the men of Cornwall to ask them that. And they said that all of them had naught save fullness of happiness and glory at the coming of Gereint to receive their homage.][67] And thereupon Gereint[50] received homage from those who were there, and there they remained together the third night. And next day Arthur's bodyguard purposed to go away. ' It is too soon for you to go away yet. Remain with me until I have finished receiving the homage of my best men who have directed their course to come to me.' And they tarried there until he had finished doing so.[68]

B. 208 And they set out towards Arthur's court; and then Gereint went to escort them with Enid as far as

[66] Text B, ' And they were not long engaged in giving, because Arthur's bodyguard and the men of Cornwall gave in abundance to every one, as they asked, goods without stint willingly '.

[67] Text B, ' And this they did. They told him there was naught but fullness of joy and glory with all of them, because Gereint had come to receive their homage '.

[68] Text B, ' And they did so '.

Diganhwy,[69] and then they separated.[39] And when W.B. 415
they had separated,[70] Ondyaw,[56] the son of the Duke of
Burgundy,[39] said to Gereint, 'Travel', said he, 'to the
ends of your dominions first, and examine very care-
fully the boundaries of your dominions, and if care R.B. 268
should weigh you down, make it known to your com-
panions.' 'God reward you,' said he,[39] 'that will I do.'
And Gereint travelled[71] then to the ends of his domi-
nions, and experienced guides with him from the best
men in his dominions. And the farthest possible point
they showed him he kept to himself.

And as he had been accustomed while he was at Arthur's court, he attended tournaments, and got to know the bravest and strongest men, until he was famous in that tract as in the other[1] place he had been in before. And until he made rich the court and his companions[39] and his *gwyrda* with the best of horses and the best of arms and with the most conspicuous and best of golden ornaments. And he rested not therefrom until his fame had flown over the face of his kingdom. And when he knew that, he began to love easy and levity, for there was not one who would give a weapon stroke[72] in opposition to him.

And he loved his wife and tranquillity in the court and songs and amusement, and he abided therein for some time. And thereafter he loved to dally with his wife in his chamber, to such an extent that he had no

[69] W.B. 'Dyganhwyr'; Text B, 'Dyngannan'.
[70] R.B. and W.B. 'and then'. [71] W.B. 'set out'.
[72] Text B, 'could bear to be'.

W.B. 416 pleasure save that, until he lost the hearts of his *gwyrda* and hunting with them and pleasure with them, and the hearts of the whole retinue of the court, and until there was murmuring and lampooning against him secretly[73] among the household of the court, because he had let go so completely as that their companionship through love of a woman.

And those words came to Erbin. And when Erbin had heard them, he told them to Enid, and asked her if it were she who had caused Gereint to do so, and made him forsake his clan[74] and his retinue. 'Not I, by my confession to God,' said she, 'and nothing is more hateful to me than that.' [And she knew not what to do, since it was not easy for her to admit it to

R.B. 269 Gereint, nor was it easier for her to listen to what she heard without warning Gereint of it. And great sorrow came upon her for that reason.][39]

And one morning, in the summer, they were in their bed, and he at the edge of it. And Enid was without sleep inside the glass-windowed room, and the sun was shining on the bed, and the clothes had slipped off his breast and his arms, and he was asleep. She looked at him, and she saw the fairness and beauty of his appearance. And she said, 'Woe is me,' said she, 'because of me are these arms and breast losing the great renown and prowess such as they had'; and therewith

W.B. 417 she let her tears flow so that they fell upon his breast.

B. 209 And one of the things which awoke him was that, [along with what she had been talking about and saying just

73 Anwyl, 'straightaway'. 74 W.B. 'tylwyth'.

before.][39] And another thought agitated him, that it was not through solicitude[75] for him that she had spoken so, but through reflecting on her love for another man, and her desire for leisure without him.

And thereupon Gereint became angry through the restlessness of[76] his mind, and he called his esquire to him.[1] And the latter came to him.[39] 'Cause quickly', said he, 'my horse and arms to be prepared, and to be ready. And do you arise,' said [he to][39] Enid, 'and dress yourself, and have your horse equipped, and put on the worst dress in your possession for riding. A curse be upon me,' said he, 'if you come here until you know whether I have lost my strength so utterly as you have said. And, in addition, if you shall be so free from care as you were to desire to get leisure with the person you were thinking about.' And she arose, and put on her meanest garments. 'I know nothing', said she, 'of what you are thinking, lord.' 'Nor will you know at present,' said he.

And then Gereint went to visit Erbin. '*Gwrda*,' said R. B. 270
he, 'I am going upon a quest, and I am not certain
when I shall come back. Do you, sir,' said he, 'look W.B. 418
after your dominions until I do come back.' 'I will do so,' said he, 'but strange to me is your going so unexpectedly. And who travels with you; since you are not the kind of man to travel the land of England alone by yourself?'[41] 'No one goes with me, save one other person.' 'God advise you now, my son,'

75 R.B. 'thinking of'.
76 W.B. and R.B. 'restless in'.

said Erbin, 'and many men with claims upon you in England.'[77]

And Gereint came to the place where his horse was; and his horse was equipped with heavy, shining foreign armour. And he commanded Enid to mount her horse and travel in front of him, and to keep a long way off him. 'And whatever you may see or whatever you may hear about me,' said he, 'turn not back; also, unless I speak to you, say not one word.'

And they travelled onwards. And he chose not the pleasantest and most inhabited road to travel, but the most desert and the one most certain to have thieves and robbers and poisonous rabid[41] wild beasts on it. And they came to a high road, and followed it. And on their side they saw a great wood, and they came towards the wood. And coming out of the wood they saw four armed men on horseback, who looked at them. And one of them said, 'This is a good place', said he, 'for us to take[39] yonder two horses, and the arms and the woman as well. That we can get safely
W.B. 419 against that one drowsy, moping, scarecrow knight
B. 210 yonder.' And Enid heard that conversation. And through fear of Gereint, she knew not whether to tell it or keep silent. 'The vengeance of God be upon me,' said she,[39] 'were I not to choose my death from his hand rather than from the hand of some one else.[78] Even
R. B. 271 though he should slay me, I will tell it him, lest I should

77 The implication here is that Gereint had already overthrown so many in England that he was bound to meet several who would desire to wipe out the defeat. 78 Text B, 'another'.

see him die ignominiously.'[79] And she awaited Gereint until he was near to her. 'Lord,' said she, 'did you hear the words of yonder[41] men about you?' He lifted up his face and looked at her in wrath. 'There was no need for you', said he,[1] 'but to obey the order I gave you, that was to keep silent. Your (word) is neither succour nor warning to me. Should you seek to see my death or my destruction by yonder men, I am not at all alarmed.' And thereupon the foremost of them lowered his lance and charged at Gereint. And he met him, and not like a sluggish man. And he let the onset go by, and himself struck the horseman in the thick part[80] of the shield, until the shield was cleft and the armour broken, and until quite a full cubit of the lance was in him, and until he was Gereint's lance's length[39] over the horse's crupper dead[41] to the ground. And the second horseman charged him wrathfully, because of his companion's slaying. And with one W.B. 420
tilt he overthrew him to the ground,[41] and slew him like the other. And the third charged him, and he slew him likewise. And likewise also[2] he slew the fourth. Sorrowful and sad was the maiden[81] at seeing that. Gereint dismounted and took off the armour from the slain men, and placed it on their saddles, and tethered the horses together, and mounted his horse. 'See what to do,' said he. 'Take the[82] four horses, and drive[39] them

79 'dybryt'=ugly, unshapely; Text B, reads 'dirybud'='without warning'; which is probably the better reading.

80 Text B, 'middle'.

81 Text B, 'Enid'.

82 Text B, 'drive'.

in front of you, and travel ahead as I told you a while ago. And say not one word to me unless I first[1] speak to you. By my confession to God,' said he,[39] 'if you do not so, you will not be unpunished.' 'I will do what I can about it, lord,' said she, 'according to your counsel.'

They travelled through the wood, and left the wood,
R.B. 272 and came to a large open plain. And in the middle of the plain there was a thick, tangled copse; and from it they saw three men on horseback coming towards them, equipped with horses and with armour on themselves and their horses, reaching to the ground. The maiden[81] looked hard at them, and when they drew near, she heard this conversation between them, 'Behold, property coming to us easily,'[83] said they.[41] 'Four horses and four sets of armour. And against yonder
W.B. 421 doleful[39] knight we will obtain them easily, and the
B. 211 maiden will also be in our power.' 'That is true,' said she, 'my husband is tired from the fight with the men awhile ago. The vengeance of God be on me, if I do not warn him,' said she. And the maiden[84] awaited Gereint until he was near to her. 'Lord,' said she, 'do you not hear the talk of yonder men concerning you?' 'What is that?' said he. 'They said among themselves that they might easily obtain this spoil.' 'Between me and God,' said he, 'more heavy upon me than that which the men say is that you keep not silent

[83] 'Ilyma dyuot da ynni, heb wynt, yn segur'. 'dyout da' can also be rendered 'a good coming', i.e., 'Behold a good chance for us', said they, 'easily'. [84] Text B, 'she'.

to me, and abide not by my counsel.' 'Lord,' said she, 'I fear lest you should be caught unprepared.'[85] 'Keep silent for the future about it;[86] your words are no help to me.' And upon that one of the horsemen lowered his lance and charged Gereint, and struck, as he thought, at him fruitfully, and Gereint received the onset without care, and knocked it aside. And he himself charged and struck him in the middle, and because of shock of man and horse the amount of his armour availed him not, until the head of the lance came out and a part of the shaft through him, and until he was the length of his arm and his lance over the horse's crupper to the ground. The other two riders came, one after the other, and their assault[87] fared no better than the others. The maiden stood and watched it. Sorrowful was she on the one hand, thinking that Gereint would be wounded in the onset of the men, and on the other hand she rejoiced[88] at seeing him victorious. Then Gereint dismounted, and fastened the three sets of armour in the three saddles, and tethered the horses together, until there were seven horses together[89] with him. R.B. 273 W.B. 422

And he mounted his own[89] horse, and ordered the maiden to drive the horses on. 'It is no more use', said he, 'my speaking to you than keeping silent, inasmuch as you do not abide by my counsel.' 'I will abide, lord, by it, so far as I can,' said she, 'but I cannot hide from you the terrible-bitter words I hear directed against you,

[85] Text B, 'without warning'.
[86] Text B, 'now'.
[87] Text B, 'journey', i.e. attempt.
[88] Text B, 'was glad'.

lord, by the strange inhabitants who travel the desert like these.' 'Between me and God,' said he, 'your words are of no help to me. Keep silent henceforth.' 'I will do so, lord, so far as I can.' And the maiden walked on ahead, and the horses were in front of her, and she kept her distance off.

And from the copse mentioned above awhile ago, they travelled through a prosperous country, sublimely beautiful, level-fair and exposed. And far off them they saw a wood, and save that they saw the edge nearest to them, they saw thereafter neither beginning nor end to the wood. And they came towards the wood. And coming out of the wood they saw five men on horseback, full of bold passion, reckless, strong, and valiant, on battle-chargers, strong, fat, huge of bone, spirited, wide-nostrilled, and proud, and a sufficiency
W.B. 423; B. 212 of arms upon the men and upon the horses. And after they had come near to each other, this is the conversation Enid heard among the horsemen, 'See here, property coming to us[83] easily and without toil,' said they. 'All of these[89] horses and arms shall we get, and the woman also, against yonder one scarecrow, drowsy, moping knight.' The maiden[81] sorrowed greatly hearing the men's talk, so that she knew not what in the
R.B. 274 world to do, and at last she decided upon warning Gereint. And she turned her horse's head towards him. 'Lord,' said she, 'had you heard the talk of yonder riders as I heard it, greater would be your anxiety than it is.' Gereint laughed harshly, angrily,

[89] W.B. 'the'.

and terribly-bitterly, and said, 'I hear you,' said he, 'breaking everything I have enjoined upon you, but maybe you will be sorry for it yet.' And immediately, behold the men met them, and victoriously and triumphantly did Gereint conquer the five men.[90] And the five sets of armour he placed in the five saddles, and tethered the twelve horses together, and entrusted them to Enid. 'I do not know', said he, 'what good it is for me to order you, but this time, by way of warning to you, do I order you.'

And the maiden proceeded straight to the wood. And as Gereint[91] had directed her to keep a distance away, she kept it.[92] And he[93] was sad to see so much W.B. 424
trouble as that on a maid like her by reason of the horses, so far as his anger allowed him.[94] They entered[95] the wood, and the wood was deep and great. And night came upon them in the wood. 'Maiden,' said he, 'it will not avail us to seek to travel.' 'Yea, lord,' said she, 'what you wish, we will do.' 'It will be better for us', said he,[39] 'to turn from the wood, and to rest and to await the day to travel.' 'We will do so gladly,' said she. And that they did. And he dismounted, and lifted her to the ground. 'I can do nothing but sleep,' said he, 'through weariness. Watch you the horses and sleep not.' 'I will do so, lord,' said

90 Text B, 'those five knights'.
91 Text B, 'he'.
92 Text B and W.B. 'she kept a distance away'.
93 Text B, 'Gereint'.
94 Lit. 'were it that anger allowed it to him'.
95 Text B, 'walked'.

she. And he slept in his armour, and passed the night, which was not long at that season.

And when she saw the hour[96] of day showing its
R.B. 275 splendour, she looked around her to see if he were awaking. And thereupon he awoke. 'Lord,' said she,[39] 'I have desired to awake you for some time.' He kept silent towards her through weariness, as he had not ordered her to speak. And he arose and said to her, 'Take the horses,' said he, 'and travel on, and keep your distance like you kept it yesterday. And a little on in
B. 213 the day they left the wood, and came to an exposed plain, and there were meadows on one side of them and
W.B. 425 mowers were mowing the meadows.[97] They came to the river in front of them, and the horses bent down and drank the water. And they climbed up a highish slope from the river,[39] and there there met them a slender youth with a towel round his neck; and they saw a burden in the towel, and knew not what it was, and a small blue pitcher in his hand, and a cup on the mouth of the pitcher. And the youth saluted Gereint, 'God prosper you,' said Gereint, 'and from what place do you come?' 'I come', said he,[39] 'from the city that is before you there. Lord,' said he, 'would you be displeased if I asked where you come from?' 'Not displeased,' said Gereint.[2, 98] 'Through yonder wood did I come.'[2] 'You came not through the wood to-day.' 'No,' said Gereint,[99] 'I tarried in the wood last night.' Then said the youth,[39] 'Methinks your state there

[96] Text B, 'dawn'.
[97] Text B, 'hay'.
[98] W.B. 'said he'.
[99] R.B. and W.B. 'he'.

last night was not good, and that you got neither food nor drink.' 'No, between me and God,' said Gereint.[99] 'Will you follow my advice,' said the youth,[1] 'take your dinner from me?' 'What sort of dinner?' said Gereint.[99] 'The morning meal which I was sending to yonder mowers, nothing better than bread and meat and wine; and, if you want it, *gwrda*, they shall have none of it.' 'I do want it,' said Gereint,[99] 'God reward you.' And Gereint dismounted, and the youth lifted the maiden[81] to the ground. And they washed and took their dinner. And the youth cut the bread into slices, and gave them drink, and waited on them entirely. And when they had finished that, the youth arose and[39] said to Gereint, 'Lord, with your permission, I will go to fetch food for the mowers.' 'Go first', said Gereint, 'to the town, and procure a lodging for me in the best place you know, and the most roomy for the horses. And do you take', said he,[39] 'the horse you wish, and its arms along with it, in payment for your services and your meal.' 'God reward you, lord,' said the youth, 'that was enough in payment of a greater service than what I have rendered you.' R.B. 276; W.B. 426

And the youth went to the town, and procured the best and most comfortable lodging he knew of in the town for Gereint.[41] And thereafter he went to the court, with the horse and armour with him,[39] and came to the place[1] where the Earl was, and told him the whole adventure. 'I will go, lord, to meet the *macwy*[100] to show him his lodging,' said he.[2] 'Go gladly,' said the

[100] Text B, 'knight'.

Earl,[99] 'and he shall receive joy here, should he wish it, in full.'[101]

And the youth came to meet Gereint, and told him he would receive joy from the Earl in his own court. But he would not go[39] save to his own lodging.[2] And Gereint came to[102] a comfortable room, with plenty of
B. 214 straw and clothes in it. And a comfortable roomy place
W.B. 427 he got for his horses, and the youth procured plenty of provisions for them. And after they had disarrayed themselves, Gereint said to Enid, 'Go you to the other side of the chamber,' said he, 'and come not to this side of the house. Call the woman of the house to you, if you want to.' 'I will do, lord,' said she, 'according to what you say.'

And thereupon the man of the house came to Gereint, and welcomed him and was rejoiced.[41] 'Sir,' said he, 'have you eaten your dinner?' 'I have,' said he. And then the youth said to Gereint,[103] 'Will you
R.B. 277 have', said he, 'something to drink or not before going to visit the Earl?' 'I will, indeed,' said he.

And thereupon the youth went to the town, and came with drink for them. And they drank, and near to that Gereint[2] said,[41] 'I can do nothing but sleep,' said he. 'Yes,' said the youth, 'and while you are sleeping, I myself will go to visit the Earl.' 'Go gladly,' said Gereint,[99] and come back here afterwards.'[104] And Gereint slept, and Enid slept. And the

[101] Not in Text B; R.B. reads 'joyfully'.
[102] W.B. and R.B. 'he got'. [103] R.B. and W.B. 'him'.
[104] R.B. and W.B. 'when I told you to come'.

youth came to the place[1] where the Earl was. And the Earl asked him where the knight's lodging was. And he told him. 'It is necessary for me', said he,[39] 'to go to wait upon him at evensong.'[105] 'Go,' said he, 'and my salutation to him, and tell him that I myself will go to visit him at evensong.'[105] 'I will do so,' said the youth.[99] And the youth came when it was time for W.B. 428 them to wake, and they arose and went for a stroll.

And when it was time for them to take their food they took it,[106] and the youth continued to wait upon them. And Gereint asked the man of the house if there were companions of his he wished to invite to him. 'There are,' said he. 'Bring them here to take enough at my cost of the best that can be bought in the town.' The best throng the man of the house had he brought there to get sufficiency at Gereint's cost.

And behold, thereupon the Earl came to visit Gereint, himself the twelfth honourable knight; and Gereint arose and welcomed him. 'God prosper you,' said the Earl. All of them went to sit down according to the precedence of their rank,[107] and the Earl conversed with Gereint, and asked him what kind of journey he was on. 'I have nothing', said he,[39] 'but to look for adventures, and to perform the quests that seem good to me.' Then the Earl looked at Enid fixedly. R.B. 278 And he was certain that he had never seen a fairer maiden than she nor one more beautiful. And he set

[105] 'y chwinsaf'. Bodfan Anwyl, 'evensong'; Anwyl, 'this evening'.
[106] Text B, 'did so'.
[107] W.B. 'as their rank merited'.

his heart and thought[39] upon her, and asked Gereint, 'May I have your permission to go to yonder maiden to talk with her, for I see she is parted from you?'[108] 'You may have it gladly,' said Gereint;[99] and he came to the place[1] where the maiden was, and said to her,
B. 215; W.B. 429 'Ah, maiden,' said he, 'it is not pleasant for you to be on this journey with yonder man.' 'It is not unpleasant for me', said she, 'to travel now the road that hē travels.' 'You have not,' said he, 'pages or maidens to wait upon you.' 'Yea,' said she,[39] 'it is more pleasant for me to follow yonder man than to have pages and maids.' 'I know good advice for you,' said he, 'I will give you my earldom in your power, if you will abide with me.' 'I will not, between me and God,' said she.[39] 'To yonder man did I ever first[39] give my faith, and I will not be unconstant to him.' 'You do wrong,' said he. 'If I slay yonder man, I shall have you as long as I shall want you; and when I want you not, I will turn you out. If of your own free will you will do so for me, harmony shall be everlasting and undivided between us so long as I shall live.' She pondered on what he said, and she decided, after pondering, to give him encouragement on what he had requested. 'This is the best thing for you, sir,' said she, 'lest there should reach me more than a measure of incontinence. Come here to-morrow to take me away, as if I knew nothing about it.' 'I will do so,' said he; and he got up then and took his leave, and went away, he and his men. And she told Gereint[39] then nothing of the conversation of

[108] Text B, 'to talk with the maid'.

the man to herself, lest either wrath or anxiety or unrest should grow in him.

And at the proper time they went to sleep, and at the beginning of the night she slept a little. And at midnight she awoke, and gathered Gereint's armour together, so that it might be ready for him to wear; and frightened and timorous,[109] she came nigh unto Gereint's bed, and quietly and softly said to him, 'Lord,' said she, 'awake and dress yourself. Behold the conversation of the Earl and myself, lord, and the thought he has of me,' said she. And she told Gereint the whole story. And though he was angry with her, he took the warning, and dressed himself. And after she had lit a candle as a light for him to dress by, 'Leave the candle there,' said he,[39] 'and order the man of the house to come here.' She went, and the man of the house came to him, and then Gereint asked him, 'Do you know', said he,[41] 'how much is due you from me?' 'Very little is due from you, I think, *gwrda*,' said he. 'Whatever is due to you now, take the eleven horses, and the eleven sets of armour.' 'God reward you, lord,' said he,[39] 'but I have spent for you not the worth of one set of arms.' 'What does that matter to you?' said he, 'you will be all the richer. Man,' said he, 'will you come as a guide to me out of the town?' 'I will go gladly,' said he, 'and which direction is your mind upon?' 'The opposite direction to the way whence we[110] came to the town do I wish to

R. B. 279; W.B. 430

[109] L. G. translates 'eryneigus', as if 'ar eu neges'.
[110] W.B. 'I'.

go.' The man of the lodging escorted him until he had
B. 216 got all the guiding.

W.B. 431 And then he commanded the maiden to go a distance ahead; and she did so, and travelled on, and the merchant went home. And he had barely got to the house, when, behold, the greatest disturbance any one had heard came upon the house. And when he looked
R.B. 280 outside, behold he saw eighty knights around the house, fully armed. And the Earl Dwnn was[39] in front of them. 'Where is the knight who was here?' said the Earl. 'By your hand,' said he,[39] 'he is some way from here; he left here a while ago.' 'Why, villein,' said he, 'did you let him go without telling me?' 'Lord,' said he, 'you did not entrust him to me. Had you entrusted him, I would not have permitted him to go.' 'In what direction', said he, 'do you think he has gone?' 'I do not know,' said he, 'save that he started by[111] the high street.'[112] They turned their horses' heads into the high street; and they saw the horses' footprints, and they followed the tracks and came to the great highway.

Then the maiden looked backwards when she saw the light of day, and she saw following a vapour and a great fog; and nearer and nearer to her she saw it, and she fretted thereat; and thought that the Earl and his host were coming after them. And then she saw a horseman appearing through the mist. 'By my faith,' said she, 'I will warn him,[2] though he should kill me.

[111] R.B. and W.B. 'walked'.
[112] R.B. 'heol'; W.B. and Text B, 'ystryt'.

I would sooner my death at his hand than see him slain without warning.[113] Lord,' said she, 'do you not see the man coming after you, and many other men along with him?' 'I see him,' said he, 'yet though silence has been imposed upon you, you never keep quiet. [I don't want your warning. Keep silent to me.'][2] And he turned upon the knight, and at the first blow he hurled him to the ground under his horse's feet. And so long as one of the eighty knights remained, at the first blow he overthrew them all. And from best to best they came at him, save the Earl. And last of all the Earl came at him, and he broke a lance, and broke a second. Then Gereint turned upon him, and struck him with his lance in the thickness[1] of his shield, until the shield[114] was cleft, and until his whole armour was pierced in that direction, and until he was on the ground over his horse's crupper, and he was[115] in danger of his life. And Gereint approached him, and at the noise of the horse the Earl[116] recovered from his swoon. 'Lord,' said he to Gereint, 'your quarter.' And Gereint granted him quarter. And what with the hardness of the ground where the man[117] had been overthrown, and the severity of the attacks they had received, not one of them went without a fall, deadly-severe, wounded-sore, bruised-terribly from Gereint.

And Gereint journeyed forward on the highway he was upon, and the maiden kept her distance, and near

W.B. 432

C. 283

R.B. 281

B. 217

113 W.B. has a superfluous 'arglwydd heb'.
114 Texts B and C, 'it'.
115 Not in Texts B or C.
116 Not in Text C.
117 Texts B and C, 'men'.

W.B. 433 to them they saw the fairest valley any one had ever seen, and a large river through the valley. And they saw a bridge on the river, and the highway[118] coming to the bridge. And above the bridge from the other side of the river they saw a castellated town, the fairest any one had ever seen. And as he reached the bridge, he saw a man on horseback[119] coming towards him across it,[119] through a small thick copse, on a large high horse, even

C. 284 of pace, spirited but well-trained. 'Ah, knight,' said Gereint, 'from what place do you come?' 'I come', said he, 'from the valley below.' 'Man,' said Gereint, 'will you tell me[115] who owns this fair valley, and yonder castellated town?' 'I will tell you gladly,'[115] said he. 'Gwiffart Petit the French and the English[119] call him, and the Little King do the Cymry call him.' 'Can I go',[120] said Gereint, 'to yonder bridge, and to the lower highway below the town?' 'Go not', said the knight,[115] 'on to his land on the other side of the bridge, unless you wish to visit him, since it is his custom that no knight may come on to his land who does not desire to visit him.' 'Between me and God,' said Gereint, 'I will go my way in spite of him.'[121] 'I am most certain,' said the knight,[115] 'if you do so now,

R.B. 282 you will meet with shame and injury morosely and wrathful-hearted.'

Gereint proceeded on the road as he had thought of

[118] Text B, 'road'.

[119] Texts B and C only.

[120] Text B, 'I will go'.

[121] W.B. 'I will take the road in spite of him'. Text B, 'I will travel along the road as before, in spite of that'.

before that. It was not the road which led to the town from the bridge which Gereint travelled on, but the road which led to the back of[1] a hard ground, bare, high, and with an extensive view. And as he was travel- W.B. 434
ling thus,[115] he saw a knight following him on a battle-charger, strong and fat, stepping proudly, broad-hoofed and wide-chested. And never had he seen a man smaller than was upon the horse; and a plenitude of armour upon him and his horse. When he overtook Gereint, he said to him, 'Tell me, sir,' said he, 'is it through ignorance or through arrogance that you did seek that I should lose my privilege and break my customs?' 'Nay,' said Gereint, 'I did not know the road was closed to any one.' 'Since you did not know it,' said he, 'come with me to my court to do right to me.' 'I will not go, by my faith,' said Gereint, 'I would not go to your lord's court, unless Arthur is your lord.' 'By the hand of Arthur,' said he,[39] 'I will have right of you now, or I will get from you heavy pain.' And immediately[39] they charged. And an esquire of his came to serve him with lances as they broke. And they each gave the other hard severe blows on their shields[41] until their shields lost all their colour. And it was hardly agreeable to Gereint to fight with him, because of his littleness and the difficulty of touching him, and the hardness of the blows that he dealt. And they ceased not therefrom until the horses fell on their knees, and at last Gereint hurled him until he was[41] headlong to the ground. And then they went on their B. 218
feet to smite, and each gave the other blows, swift-

W.B. 435 angry, hard-severe, strong-bitter, and their helmets were pierced, and their head-pieces broken, and their
R.B. 283 armour shattered, until their eyes lost their light by reason of the sweat and blood. And at last Gereint became angry, and called up his strength to him, and severely-angry, quickly-boldly, terribly-stoutly, he uplifted his sword, and struck him on the flat[122] of his head a blow deadly-severe, poisonously-violent, terribly-sharp, until the whole head-armour was broken, and the skin and the flesh, and until there was a wound to the bone, and until the sword was out of the hand of the Little King in the extremity of the field from him, and he asked quarter in God's name of Gereint and his mercy then. 'You shall have quarter,' said Gereint, 'though your courtesy was not good, and you were not reasonable, on condition that you come as[123] my friend, and do not go against me a second time henceforth;[41] and should you hear I am in affliction, you will rescue me from it.' 'You shall have that, lord, gladly'; and he took his faith thereon. 'And do you, lord,' said he,[39] 'come with me to yonder court to cast off your weariness and tiredness from you.' 'I will not come, between me and God,' said Gereint.[50] And thereupon Gwiffart Petit looked at Enid in the place[1] where she was. And bitter was it to him to see the multitude of affliction on a person so well-born as she.
W.B. 436 And then[39] he said to Gereint, 'Lord,' said he, 'you do wrong not to take moderation and ease, for should

[122] Text C, 'top'.
[123] Text B, 'be'.

difficulty meet you in that state, it will not be easy for you to triumph.'

Gereint desired nothing but to proceed on. And he mounted his horse, blood-stained and stiff.[124] And the maiden kept her distance, and they travelled towards a wood which they saw ahead. And the heat from the sun was great, and his armour clung to his flesh because of the sweat and the blood.

And when they had come to the wood, he stood under a tree to escape the sun's heat, and recollection came to him there of his pain more than when he got it. R.B. 284
And the maiden stood under another tree, and thereupon they heard horns and a mustering. This was the reason. Arthur and his retinue were dismounting in the wood. Then he thought which way he should go in order to avoid them, and thereupon behold a man on foot perceived him. He was a servant to the Steward; and he came to the Steward, and told him what kind of man[125] he had seen in the wood. Then the Steward caused his horse to be saddled, and took his lance and shield and came to the place[1] where Gereint was. 'Ah, knight,' said he, 'what are you doing here?' 'I am standing under a cool tree[126] to avoid the ardour and heat of the sun.' 'What journey are you upon, B. 219
and who are you?' 'I seek adventure and go the road I wish to.' 'Yea,' said Cai, 'come along with me to W.B. 437
visit Arthur, who is near by.' 'I will not go, between me and God,' said Gereint.[91] 'You will have to come,'

[124] or 'uncomfortable'.
[125] Text B, 'knight'.
[126] Text B, 'in the cool'.

said Cai. And Gereint recognized Cai, but Cai did not recognize Gereint.[127] And after that preparation, they tilted.[41] And Cai struck at Gereint[128] as best as he could. And Gereint became angry, and struck him under the two jaws[41] with the butt-end of his lance, until he fell headlong to the ground. And he did not wish to do[39] worse to him than that.

Wildly and in fear Cai arose, and mounted his horse, and came to his lodging. And thence he strolled over to Gwalchmai's pavilion. 'Man,' said he to Gwalchmai, 'I have heard from one of the servants that he has seen in the wood above a wounded knight with wretched armour upon him; and if you would do right, you will go to see if that be true.' 'I don't mind going,' said Gwalchmai. 'Take now your horse,' said Cai,[39] 'and some of your armour, for I fear he is not courteous to any one who goes to him.'

R.B. 285 Gwalchmai took his lance and his shield, and mounted his horse, and came to the place where Gereint was. 'Ah, knight,' said he, 'what sort of journey are you on?' 'I travel on my own quests, and to find adventures in the world.'[2] 'Will you tell me who you are, or will you come to visit Arthur who is near here?' 'I will not join myself with you now,[41] and I will not also[41] go to visit Arthur,' said he. And he

W.B. 438 recognized Gwalchmai, and Gwalchmai did not recognize him. 'I do not feel in the least[1] disposed,' said Gwalchmai, 'to let you leave me at all until I know who you are'; and he charged him with his lance,

[127] Text B, 'him'. [128] R.B. and W.B. 'him'.

and struck him on the shield, so that the shaft was shattered and[39] broken, and the horses head to head. And then Gwalchmai[129] looked steadfastly at him and recognized him. 'Oh Gereint,' said he, 'is it you who are here?' 'I am not Gereint,' said he. 'Between me and God, you are Gereint,' said he,[1] 'and an ill-advised, pitiable journey is this.' Then he looked round and perceived Enid, and welcomed her, and was glad to see her. 'Gereint,' said Gwalchmai, 'come to visit Arthur, your lord[130] and your cousin.' 'I will not go,' said he; 'I am not in a condition wherein I can visit any one.' And thereupon, behold one of the *macwyaid* came after Gwalchmai to get news. Then Gwalchmai sent him back[41] to tell Arthur that Gereint was there[39] wounded, and that he would not come to visit Arthur.[128] And that it was pitiable to look upon the state that he was in. And this without Gereint's knowledge, and in a whisper between himself and the *macwy*. 'Beg Arthur,' said he,[39] 'to bring his pavilion near the road, for he will not come to visit him of his own free will. And it is not easy to press him in the B. 220
condition he is in.'

And the *macwy* [came to Arthur, and][39] told him[131] this. And he moved[132] his pavilion to the side of the R.B. 286
road. And then the maiden's[81] heart rejoiced. And W.B. 439
Gwalchmai enticed Gereint all along the road to the place[39] where Arthur[133] was encamped, and his

[129] W.B. and Text B, 'he'. [130] Text B, 'uncle'.
[131] Text B, 'Arthur'. [132] Text B, 'caused to be moved'.
[133] Text B, 'Gereint'.

macwyaid[39] were pitching the tent on the side of the road. 'Lord,' said Gereint, 'hail!' 'God prosper you,' said Arthur, 'and who are you?' 'This is Gereint,' said Gwalchmai, 'and of his own free will he would not come to visit you to-day.' 'Yea,' said Arthur, 'he is ill-advised.' And then Enid came to the place[1] where Arthur was, and saluted him. 'God prosper you,' said Arthur, 'lift her down, one of you.' And one of the *macwyaid*[39] lifted her down. 'Oh Enid,' said he, 'what journey is this?' 'I know not, lord,' said she, 'save that it is inevitable for me to travel the road he travels.' 'Lord,' said Gereint, 'we will depart with your permission.' 'Where will that be to?' said Arthur; 'you cannot go now, unless you go to finish your death.' 'He would not listen to my single[41] invitation to him,' said Gwalchmai. 'He will listen to me,' said Arthur; 'and, moreover, he goes not from here until he is well.' 'I would prefer, lord,' said Gereint,[39] 'if you would let me go away.' 'I will not let you, between me and God,' said Arthur.[50] And then he caused a maiden[134] to be called to Enid to take her to Gwenhwyfar's chamber-tent.[39] And Gwenhwyfar and all the ladies were glad to see her. And they took
W.B. 440 her riding-dress off her, and put another on her.

And Arthur[50] called Cadyrieith and ordered him to pitch a tent for Gereint and his doctors, and put it on him to provide supplies of everything as he might require. And Cadyrieith did all as he was commanded,[135] and brought Morgan Tud and his pupils to Gereint. And

[134] Text B, 'maidens'. [135] Text B, 'so'.

Arthur and his retinue tarried there for nearly a month, so that Gereint might be under medical treatment. And when his flesh was strong with Gereint, he came to R.B. 287 Arthur and asked permission to go his way. 'I do not know if you are quite well yet.' 'I am indeed, lord,' said Gereint. 'It is not you that I will believe regarding that, but the doctors who have been attending you.' And he summoned the doctors to him, and asked them if that were true. 'True, lord,'[1] said Morgan Tud. Next day Arthur gave him permission to go away, and he[136] went to finish his journey.

[And that day Arthur left there,][39] and Gereint commanded Enid[1] to walk in front, and to keep her distance as she had done before that. And she went on, and followed the high road. And while they were so doing, they heard the loudest cry in the world near to them.

'Stand here,' said he, 'wait, and I will go to see the cause of the cry of distress.' 'I will do so,' said she. And he went, and came to a clearing that was near the road, and in the clearing he saw two horses, one with B. 221 a man's saddle upon it, and the other with a woman's saddle upon it.[39] And a knight with his armour on, dead, and over the knight he saw a young woman, with W.B. 441 a riding-dress upon her, crying in distress. 'Ah, lady,' said Gereint, 'what is the matter with you?' 'I was here travelling, I and the man I loved best; and then three giants of giants came at us, and without keeping right at all with him, slew him.' 'Which road did they go?' said

136 Text B, 'Next day Arthur set out from there, and Gereint . . .'

Gereint.[91] 'There, on the high road,' said she. He came to Enid. 'Go', said he, 'to the lady who is below[39] there, and await me till I come.' Sad was she to be told this; nevertheless she came to the maiden, and it was terrible to listen to her. And she felt certain that Gereint would never come back. He went after the giants and overtook them. And each of them was
R.B. 288 larger than three men, and a huge club was on the shoulder of each of them. This is what he did. He rushed at one of them, and struck him with his lance through the middle,[39] and pulled his lance out of him, and struck another also through.[39] And the third turned on him, and struck him with his club until he cleft his shield, and till it was stayed by his shoulder, and until all his wounds reopened, and until he was losing all his blood. Then he drew his sword, and attacked him, and struck him a severely-heavy, angry,
W.B. 442 and hardly-passionate blow on the top of his head, until he clove his head and neck down to the two shoulders, and until he fell down dead. And he left him dead so, and came to where Enid was. And when he saw Enid, he fell down as if dead to the ground[39] from his horse. Enid gave a terrible-loud, endlessly-sad cry of distress, and came over him where he had fallen.

And thereupon, behold, the Earl of Limours came at the cry of distress, and the retinue that was with him, who were travelling along the road. And because of the cry of distress they came across the road. And then the Earl said to Enid, 'Ah, lady,' said he, 'what has befallen you?' '*Gwrda*,' said she,

'the one man I have ever loved most or ever will love has been slain.' 'What', said he to the other, 'has happened to you?' 'The man I love most has been slain,' said she also. 'What slew them?' said he. 'Giants', said the latter,[84] 'slew the man I loved most. And the other knight', said she,[39] 'went after them, and as you see him he came from them, and has lost blood more than measure. And I think', said she,[39] 'that he came not back without slaying some or all of them.' The Earl caused the knight who had been left dead to be buried. He thought that there was some life in Gereint still, and he arranged to take him with him to the court[41] in the hollow of his shield and on a bier, to see if he would live. And the two maids came to the court. B. 222 R.B. 289 W.B. 443

And after they had come to the court, Gereint was placed[1] on a bier-bed at the end of the table that was[39] in the hall. Then they all disarrayed, and the Earl besought Enid to take off her clothes, and put on other garments. 'I will not, between me and God,' said she. 'Ah, lady,' said he, 'be not so sorrowful as that.' 'Very hard is it to persuade me about that,' said she. 'I will do to[137] you,' said he, 'so[39] that it will not be necessary for you to be sad, whatever may happen to yonder knight, whether he live or die. There is here[39] a good earldom, which you shall have in your power, and me along with it,' said he. 'Be happy and joyous in the future.' 'I will not be happy, by my confession to God,' said she, 'as long as I live henceforth.'

[137] W.B. 'show'.

'Come to eat,' said he. 'I will not go, between me and God,' said she. 'You shall come, between me and God,' said he.[1] And he took her with him to table against her will, and commanded her to eat frequently.

'I will not eat, by my confession to God,' said she, 'until the man who is on yonder bier shall eat.' 'You cannot fulfil that,' said the Earl.[39] 'Yonder man is wellnigh dead now.' 'I will put his power to the test,' said she. He offered her a cupful of liquor.[1] 'Drink', said he, 'this cupful, and it will change your mind.' 'A curse upon me,' said she, 'if I drink a drink[39] until he drinks.' 'Yea,' said the Earl, 'it is
W.B. 444 no more use my being courteous to you than discourteous.' And he boxed her ears.[138] Thereupon she uttered a loud, high-sad cry of distress, and grieved much[1] more with sorrow[41] then by far than before that, and thought in her mind that had Gereint been alive, she would not have been struck so. Then Gereint awoke from his swoon through the ringing out of the cry of distress, and he rose to a sitting posture, and found his
R.B. 290 sword in the hollow of his shield, and rushed to the place[1] where the Earl was, and struck him a blow, lively-heavy, passionately-severe, strong-steady, on top of the head, until he clove him, and until the table stayed the sword. Thereupon everybody then left the tables and fled outside, and it was not fear of the living

[138] Nothing illustrates more strikingly the delicacy of the Welsh stories, compared with Chrétien, than the handling of this episode. In Chrétien Enid is forced to submit to the Earl; and in the morning following, he coarsely shows her the dead body of Eric (Gereint).

man that was greatest on them, but seeing the dead man rising up to slay them.

And then Gereint looked at Enid, and two griefs came to him, one of them seeing Enid had lost her colour and looks, and the second of them knowing that she was in the right. 'Lady,' said he, 'do you know where our horses went to?'[139] 'I do know, lord,'[1] said she, 'where your horse[140] went, but I know not where the other went. To yonder house your horse went.' Then he went to the house and brought his horse out, and mounted it, and took Enid up from the ground, and B. 223 put her between himself and the saddle-bow, and journeyed straight away.

And while they were travelling thus, as if between two fences, and as night was conquering the day, W.B. 445 behold they saw between them and the sky, behind them, lances and great[41] spears, and heard the noises of horses and the uproar of a host. 'I hear a coming behind us,' said he; 'I will put you on the other side of the fence.' And he put her.[39] And thereupon, behold a knight charged at him, and couched his lance. And when she saw this, she said, 'Oh, sir,' said she, 'what renown will you get by slaying a dead man, whoever you are?' 'Oh, God,' said he, 'and is it Gereint?' 'Yes, between me and God, and who are you?' said she.[41] 'I am the Little King,' said he, 'come to succour you on hearing that you were afflicted. Had you followed my advice, there would not have happened what has happened of hardship to

[139] R.B. and W.B. 'are'. [140] W.B. 'yours'.

you.' 'Nothing can there be', said Gereint, 'against what God wills. A lot of good', said Gereint,[50]
R.B. 291 'comes from advice!' 'Yea,' said the Little King, 'now I know good advice for you. Come with me to the court of my sister's son-in-law, which is near here, to get medical attendance, and that of the best that can be got in the kingdom.' 'We will come gladly,' said Gereint. And a horse of one of the esquires[141] of the Little King[39] was put under Enid; and they came straight to the Baron's court, and glad were they at their coming there. And succour they got and service. And next day, in the morning, men were sent to obtain
W.B. 446 doctors;[142] and after a short time [they came. And they][39] attended Gereint until he was quite well. And so long as he was under treatment the Little King caused his armour to be put in order until it was as good as it had ever been at its best.

And a fortnight and a month were they there. And then the Little King said to Gereint,[127] 'We will now go on[41] towards my own court to rest and to take ease.' 'If it is good to you,' said Gereint, 'we will travel one day yet, and from there return home.'[41] 'Gladly,' said the Little King, 'travel you.' And in the youth of the day they travelled, and Enid travelled[143] more happily and joyfully with them that day than ever. And they came to a great road. And they saw it divide in two, and along one of them[39] they saw a man on foot coming

[141] 'ysweineit'.
[142] Text B, 'and doctors were got'; W.B. 'who could be got'.
[143] Text B, 'was'.

to meet them. And Gwiffart asked the man on foot where he had come from. 'I come', said he,[1] 'from performing quests in the country.' 'Tell me,' said Gereint, 'which is the better of these two roads for me to travel on.' 'That is the best for you to travel on,' said he, 'for if you go by this one below,[41] you will never return. Below,' said he, 'there is the B. 224 enclosure of mist, and there are in it magic games, and however many men came there, not one has ever returned. And the court of the Earl Owein[144] is there, R.B. 292 and he allows none to lodge in the town, except he W.B. 447 who comes to him at his court.' 'Between me and God,' said Gereint,[39] 'we will go the lower road.'

And along it they came till they came[39] to the town; and the pleasantest and fairest place for them in the town did they take for their lodging. And while they were so, behold a young *macwy*[145] came to them, and saluted them. 'God prosper you,' said they.[1] '*Gwyrda*, said he, 'what preparation is yours here?' 'Taking lodgings,' said they,[39] 'to stay the night.' 'It is not the custom of the man who owns the town to allow any gentlemen to lodge within it, save those who go to him himself[39] in the court. And come you to the court.' 'We will go gladly,' said Gereint.

And they went along with the *macwy*; and they were glad to see them in the court. And the Earl came into the hall to meet them. And he ordered the tables to be prepared, and they washed, and went to sit

144 W.B. 'Eywein'.
145 R.B. and W.B. 'man'.

down. This is how they sat: Gereint sat on one side of the Earl, and Enid on the other, and next to Enid the Little King. Then the Countess nearest to Gereint; thereafter everybody according as was fitting for them.

And thereupon Gereint thought about the games; and guessed he would not be allowed to go to the
W.B. 448 games;[39] and for that reason he ceased eating. Then the Earl looked at Gereint, and thought,[39] and he guessed that he ceased eating because of not wanting to go to the games. And he took it ill that he had ever made those[39] games, were it only lest he should lose so good a youth as Gereint; and if Gereint were to ask him to stop those games, he would do so gladly for ever. And then the Earl said to Gereint, 'What thought is yours, sir,[39] that you eat not? If you hesitate to go to the games, you shall have it that you shall not go, and
R.B. 293 that no man shall ever go, through honour unto you.' 'God reward you,' said Gereint, 'I do not wish aught but to go to the games and to be guided there.' 'If that be most pleasing to you, you shall have it gladly.' 'Most pleasing, indeed,' said he. And they ate, and plenty of service, and a multitude of dishes, and a host of liquors did they get. And when they had finished eating, they arose. And Gereint called for his horse and arms; and attired himself and his horse, and the whole retinues came until they were near to the fence. And from the bottom of the fence as far up into the sky as they could see there was nothing, save[146] on every

[146] We have been forced to paraphrase the original in order to catch the sense of the picture.

stake which they saw in the fence there was a man's head, except on two stakes. And very many were the B. 225
stakes in the fence and through it. And then the Little W.B. 449
King said, 'Can no one accompany the chief; only he himself?' 'No one may go,' said the Earl Owein.[147] 'Which is the direction to go there?' said Gereint. 'I do not know,' said Owein,[147] 'but take the direction you will, and[39] which is the easiest for you.'

And without fear or hesitation,[148] Gereint went straight on into the mist. And when he left the mist, he came to a large orchard, and he saw a clearing in the orchard, and a pavilion of brocaded silk with a red canopy he saw in the clearing, and he saw the door of the pavilion was open, and there was an apple tree opposite the door of the pavilion, and on a branch of the apple tree he saw[149] a large sounding-horn. And Gereint[50] dismounted then, and came into the pavilion. And there was naught in the pavilion save one maiden sitting in a golden chair, and another chair opposite her, empty. So Gereint sat in the empty chair. 'Sir,' said the maiden, 'I would not advise you to sit in that chair.' 'Why?' said Gereint. 'The man who owns that chair has never suffered another to R.B. 294
sit in the chair.' 'It doesn't matter to me,' said Gereint, 'if he takes my sitting in the chair[150] ill.' And thereupon they heard a great din around[151] the pavilion, and Gereint looked what the cause of the noise was. And W.B. 450

147 W.B. 'Ywein'. 148 Text B, 'and in safety'.
149 R.B. and W.B. 'there was'.
150 Text B, 'it'. 151 W.B. 'near'.

he saw a knight outside upon a battle-charger, wide-nostrilled, valiant, high-spirited, big-boned, and a
C. 285 cloak in two pieces upon him and on the horse, and plenty of armour thereunder. 'Say, sir,' said he to Gereint, 'who permitted[152] you to sit there?' 'Myself,' said he. 'It was ill of you,' said he,[91] 'to do me so great a shame and disgrace. Rise up from there to do me right for your impertinence.' And Gereint arose, and they immediately started to tilt;[153] and they broke a set of shafts, and they broke a second set,[154] and they broke a third set.[154] And each struck the other blows hard-severe, quickly-hard. And at last Gereint became angry, and spurred his horse and charged, and struck him in the centre of the shield until it clove, and until the head of the lance penetrated the armour, and until all the girths broke, and until he was over the horse's crupper on the ground, the length of Gereint's lance, and the length of his arm headlong [to the ground. And he drew his sword out quickly, as if to cut his head off].[119] 'Oh, lord,' said he, 'your quarter; and you shall have what you will.' 'I want nothing,' said he, 'save that there shall never be this game here, nor the fence of mist, nor magic, nor enchantment of games[155] as there has been.'[154] 'You shall have that gladly, lord.'
W.B. 451 'Cause', said he,[119] 'the mist to go away[115] from here.'
B. 254 'Sound yonder horn,' said he, 'and the moment you sound it, the mist will clear away; and until the knight who would overthrow me would sound it, the mist

[152] R.B. and W.B. 'told'.
[153] Text B, 'tilted'.
[154] Not in Text C.
[155] Text C only.

would never clear away from here.' And sad and sorrowful was Enid in the place where she was through anxiety on Gereint's behalf.

And then Gereint came and[39] sounded the horn, and R.B. 295 immediately he blew one note on it the mist cleared away. And the retinues came together, and all made peace with one another. And that night the Earl invited Gereint and the Little King. And next day in the morning they parted; and Gereint went towards his own dominions, [and he governed prosperously thereafter, and his prowess and his valiance continued with fame and renown to him and to Enid thenceforth.][156]

156 Texts B and C, ' And Gereint had no progress thereafter,' i.e. 'Gereint travelled no more '.

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD
BY JOHN JOHNSON, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Oxford Translation Series

All volumes sold separately. Price 5s. net each.

¶ *Greek*

HESIOD. *The Poems and Fragments.* By A. W. MAIR.

PLATO. *The Four Socratic Dialogues.* By BENJAMIN JOWETT, with Preface by EDWARD CAIRD. Cheaper edition, 4s. 6d. net.

PLATO. *The Republic.* By BENJAMIN JOWETT. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net. Cheaper edition 7s. 6d. net, or 4s. 6d. net each volume. In one volume on India paper, 10s. 6d. net.

PLATO. *Thirteen Epistles of Plato.* By L. A. POST.

PLATO. *Epinomis.* By J. HARWARD.

DEMOSTHENES. *Public Orations.* By A. W. PICKARD-CAMBRIDGE. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

ARISTOTLE. *Politics.* By BENJAMIN JOWETT, with Introduction by H. W. C. DAVIS. Cheaper edition, 4s. 6d. net.

PLUTARCH. *Selected Essays.* By T. G. TUCKER. Selected Essays from *The Moralia*, by A. O. PRICKARD. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

EPICTETUS. *The Discourses and Manual*, with Fragments of his Writings. By P. E. MATHESON. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

MARCUS AURELIUS. *The Meditations.* By JOHN JACKSON, with Introduction by CHARLES BIGG.

LUCIAN. By H. W. and F. G. FOWLER. Four vols. 16s. net.

PHILOSTRATUS. *In Honour of Apollonius of Tyana.* By J. S. PHILLIMORE. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

LONGINUS. *On the Sublime.* By A. O. PRICKARD.

MARK THE DEACON. *The Life of Porphyry of Gaza.* By G. F. HILL.

¶ *Latin*

CAESAR. *The Gallic War.* By F. P. LONG.

CAESAR. *The Civil War.* By F. P. LONG.

¶ *Latin* (contd.)

LUCRETIUS. *On the Nature of Things.* By CYRIL BAILEY.

VIRGIL. By JOHN JACKSON. On India paper, 7s. 6d. n.

HORACE. By E. C. WICKHAM. Out of print.

PROPERTIUS. By J. S. PHILLIMORE.

STATIUS. *The Silvae.* By D. A. SLATER.

TACITUS. *The Histories.* By W. HAMILTON FYFE. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

TACITUS. *The Dialogue, Agricola and Germania.* By W. HAMILTON FYFE.

APULEIUS. *The Apologia and Florida.* By H. E. BUTLER.

APULEIUS. *The Metamorphoses.* By H. E. BUTLER. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

SIDONIUS. *The Letters.* By O. M. DALTON. Two vols. 8s. 6d. net.

ST. BERNARD. *On consideration.* By GEORGE LEWIS.

¶ *Miscellaneous*

THE PARALLEL PSALTER. The Prayer Book version of the Psalms and a new version on opposite pages. By S. R. DRIVER.

BEOWULF. By JOHN EARLE. Cheaper edition, 4s. 6d. n.

ALFRED. Version of the Consolations of Boethius. By W. J. SEDGEFIELD.

DANTE. *The Convivio.* By W. W. JACKSON.

DANTE. *The Divina Commedia.* By H. F. TOZER.

MACHIAVELLI. *The Prince.* By N. H. THOMSON.

HEINE. *The Book of Songs.* By JOHN TODHUNTER. On India Paper, 7s. 6d. net.